DIRECTOR, FBI
ATTENTION: CENTRAL RESEARCH DESK

10/28/58

SAC, HOUSTON (100-Dead)

W. P. STRUBE
INFORMATION CONCERNING
(INTERNAL SECURITY)

On 10/6/58, captioned individual telephonically advised that he is President of Mid-American Life Insurance Company, 3400 Montrose Boulevard, Houston, Texas, and is also Secretary of Christian Anti-Communism Crusade. He stated that in the latter capacity he frequently speaks before civic groups, etc., in an effort to enlighten the people regarding the threat of Communism. He gave the writer the impression that he is rabid in this pursuit.

STRUBE said his specific reason for calling the Houston Office was to bring to attention of this office an article which appeared in a university paper "Vision", Volume 9, Number 1, dated 9/25/58, a publication of the University of St. Thomas, Houston, Texas, wherein an article appears on page 2 captioned "University of Mexico Students are in Revolting Predicament". He said he felt this article showed Communist influence in that it was a write-up about University of Mexico students having to walk a mile from the end of the bus line to the school because the bus company had tried to raise the fare and the students contested it. He said the article read "The Capitalists won---" referring to the bus company. He said he felt this attitude, as reflected in the article, showed that the unidentified writer was likely exposed to Communist influence or might be writing in that fashion unaware that he was using Communist-type terminology.

STRUBE said he had an extra copy of "Vision" and some other literature he would like to mail to this office. On 10/7/58, an envelope containing literature identified as:

"Christian Anti-Communism Crusade
Houston Office
P. O. Box 6422
Houston 6 Texas
Phone JA 6 1545"

100-9540-1

2 - Bureau (RM)
(1) - Houston

KBJ:gjg
(3)

New dead 100-
Case -

was received at the Houston Office, apparently sent by STRUBE. It contained four booklets by a Dr. FRED SCHWARTZ of Australia. These are:

1. The Communist Interpretation of Peace
2. The Heart, Mind and Soul of Communism
3. The Christian Answer to Communism
4. Communism, Diagnosis - Treatment

Also included was the copy of "Vision" dated 9/25/58.

Also included was a pamphlet published by the United States Government Printing Office entitled:

International Communism
(The Communist Mind)

Staff Consultation with
FREDERICK CHARLES SCHWARZ

Committee on Un-American Activities
House of Representatives
Eighty-fifth Congress
First Session

STRUBE stated he would be glad to help the FBI in any way he could in its investigation of Communist activities.

This is being furnished the Bureau in order to record data concerning the Christian Anti-Communism Crusade and STRUBE inasmuch as it is likely that future inquiries will be received regarding him and the organization.

In event the Bureau desires any of the above publications, they will be forwarded upon request. No further action is being taken in this matter.

1. Booklets —
① Communism, Diagnosis (Dr. Fred Schwarz) 10/29/58
② The Christian Answer to Communism (by above author)
③ The Heart, Mind & Soul of Communism (by above author)
④ The Comm. Interpretation of Peace (by above author)

2 – Univ. of St. Thomas School Paper dated 9/2/58

3 – Booklet: International Communism
(Comm. on Un-Am. Activities – House of Rep. 85th Cong.

1A4 – 3 Booklet on Communism. (1-13-60)

1a5 – 1 booklet on Terrorist Activity

1ab – Full page ad in The Houston Chronicle, 2/2/79, by W.P. Strube Jr re visit of Vice Premier Teng Hsiao-Ping. 2/5/79

100-9540-1A
SEARCHED INDEXED
SERIALIZED LOS FILED LOS
OCT 29 1958

File No. 100-9540-1A

Date Rec'd 10-7-58

From W. P. Strube
(Contributor)
3400 Montross
(Contributor)

By K. Jackson
(Name - Special Agent)

To Be Returned [] Yes [X] No

Description:

Booklets:

1) Communism, Diagnosis-Treatment by Dr. Fred
2) The Christian Answer to Communism " " "
3) The Heart, Mind, and Soul of Communism " " "
4) The Communist Interpretation of Peace " " "

THE
CHRISTIAN ANSWER
TO
COMMUNISM



BY

DR. FRED SCHWARZ

CHRISTIAN ANTI-COMMUNISM CRUSADE
Houston Office
P. O. Box 6422, Phone JA 6-1545
Houston 6, Texas

THE CHRISTIAN ANSWER TO COMMUNISM

A Companion Booklet to

The Heart, Mind and Soul of COMMUNISM and

The Communist Interpretation of Peace

PRICE

Per Copy	$.50
Per Dozen	3.60
Per Hundred	20.00

CHRISTIAN ANTI-COMMUNISM CRUSADE
LONG BEACH 1, CALIFORNIA
P. O. Box 890



DR. FRED SCHWARZ

INTRODUCING THE AUTHOR

Dr. Fred C. Schwarz was born in Brisbane, Queensland, Australia, January 15, 1913. Educated at the Brisbane Grammer School, and later at the University of Queensland where he graduated in Science. He became a school teacher and completed his degree in Arts while teaching, and then became lecturer to the Queensland Teachers College in Mathematics and Science. Subsequently, while continuing his lecturing, he completed the Medical Course at the Queensland University, graduating in Medicine and Surgery. He entered medical practice in Sidney, where he is now engaged in general practice, though part of his time was formerly given to work in Psychiatry.

Dr. Schwarz has been a Christian lay preacher for many years, and his attention was first directed to Communism while at the University of Queensland where he debated a member of the Central Committee of the Communist Party of Australia. Later he began a special study of the basic Communist texts in an effort to explore not only the deeds, but also the thought-life of World Communism. He has become widely known as one of the most informed non-Communists in the world on the basic Communist tests, and has had an open challenge to debate any Communist on any platform in any part of the world. A number of debates have resulted with a consequent sharpening of his appreciation of the character, mind, and technique of leading Anglo-Saxon Communists. Being invited to speak at many gatherings, he has devoted more and more time to an exposition of the tremendous danger in which the entire civilized world lies at the moment, from the incredibly rapid progress of this malignant force. He is now on another world tour, speaking before numerous civic and church groups, endeavoring always to present

in simple language just what Communism is, believing that understanding is the irreducible minimum for intelligent counter-action. He comes to this country from very recent tours in Japan, the Philippines, Australia, New Zealand, and the British Isles, and has a facinating yet terrifying story to tell.

Subjects on which he speaks include the following:

1) "The Heart, Mind, and Soul of Communism"
2) "Why Millionaires, Ministers of Religion, and University Professors Become Communists"
3) "The Communist Blue Print For the Conquest of the United States"
4) "The Imminent Peril in the East—Will Japan Go Communist?"
5) "The Communist Program in Education and Relision"
6) "The Death of Stalin"
7) "Communism and Cancer—A Surgeon's Dilemma"
8) "Will Communism Collapse From Within?"
9) "The Communist Liquidation Lists, How They Are Prepared, And Who Is on Them"
10) "Why Has Communism Attacked the Jews?"
11) "Will the New China Policy Lead to War?"
12) "Deadly Deeds From Diseased Ideas"
13) "Buying Defeat on the Installment Plan"
14) "Can We Out-evangelize—Out-live and Out-die the Communists"

Dr. Schwarz finding a rich field of illustrative material in the realm of medical experience, draws upon the daily life of practicing physician and surgeon to illustrate and clarify the issues confronting this country in the conflict with the malignant social disease of Communism. He is available for engagements. He can be contacted through Dr. W. E. Pietsch, Box 890, Long Beach 1, California.

W. E. PIETSCH, D.D.
PRESIDENT

"When the enemy shall come in like a flood, the Spirit of the Lord shall lift up a standard against him." Isaiah 59:19

It is with pleasure that we heartily recommend this booklet giving an insight into the Communist philosophy and the Christian answer to this malignant disease.

The Christian Anti-Communism Crusade is incorporated under the laws of the State of Iowa, and has been granted tax exemption as an educational, religious, organization on a three-fold program of education, evangelism, and dedication.

We solicit your cooperation and prayers as we endeavor to alert people as to the serious threat of Communism. Membership is $10.00 per year; life membership, $100.00.

The Christian Anti-Communism Crusade is dedicated to the great historic fundamentals of our Christian faith. Your cooperation and prayers will be greatly appreciated.

W. E. Pietsch, D. D.

APPLICATION FOR MEMBERSHIP

Name _____

Address _____

City _____ State _____

I hereby apply for ☐ Annual Membership $_____
☐ Life

(Annual Membership $10 — Life Membership $100)

Mail to: Christian Anti-Communism Crusade
Box 890
Long Beach 1, California

ROBERTS WESLEYAN COLLEGE
NORTH CHILI, NEW YORK

OFFICE OF
PRESIDENT

October 1, 1956

Dr. Fred. C. Schwarz
Christian Anti-Communism Crusade
Box 508
Waterloo, Iowa

Dear Doctor Schwarz:

We were so very grateful for your messages here on the Sunday night of our convocation and also for the first Chapel service on Monday morning.

I do not know when we have had a more hearty response to messages presented than were received from our students and friends for your messages to us. I am sure your coming has made our young people especially more conscious of the subtlety and the power of the Communist appeal.

May the Lord continue to bless you richly in your ministry for the cause of freedom and confidence in the God who has made us free men.

Yours most sincerely in Christ,

Merlin G. Smith

MGS:lhd



ESTABLISHED MAY 19, 1883

THE SPOKESMAN-REVIEW

DAILY, SUNDAY

Spokane, Wash.

January 20, 1956

To Whom It May Concern:

It is my pleasure to indorse Dr. Fred C. Schwarz of Sydney, Australia, without reservation, as a brilliant speaker and a competent authority on the menace of Communism.

He has a profound knowledge of the inner workings of the Communist conspiracy and he has dedicated his talents to exposing the true nature of this threat to the free world. Few men are better able to reveal the frightening aspect of this Red menace, in language a layman can understand, than Dr. Schwarz.

I commend him to you as a speaker and I urge you to give him whatever support you can in the promotion of his program. Spokane is fortunate to have him here and it is my hope that as many as possible may hear his message.

Sincerely,

Ashley E. Holden

Ashley E. Holden

THE NATIONAL WAR COLLEGE
OFFICE OF THE COMMANDANT
WASHINGTON 25, D. C.

11 June 1956

Dear Dr. Schwarz:

To present the last official lecture of the academic year at The National War College is an honor, but because of the long list of distinguished speakers who preceded you, lecturing at the end of the year could also have been a handicap. However, your humor, experience and unusual ability to clarify and simplify the ideology and unchanging objectives of the Communists far outweighed any disadvantage that might have been involved in following so many outstanding predecessors.

Your excellent lecture was interesting and valuable. On behalf of all members of the College may I thank you for your outstanding contribution to the work of The National War College.

Sincerely yours,

E. T. Wooldridge

E. T. WOOLDRIDGE
Vice Admiral, U. S. Navy
Commandant

Dr. Fred C. Schwarz

Printed in U. S. A.

FOREWORD

Paul E. Billheimer, Pres. Great Commission Schools, Anderson, Indiana.

The substance of this booklet was presented by Dr. Schwarz in a series of radio messages on WCBC Anderson's 1000 watt regional station owned and operated by Great Commission Schools, Inc.

The impact upon the radio audience was startling, and resulted in a spontaneous demand for Dr. Schwarz' brilliant radio addresses in print. This booklet is published in response to that demand. It is hoped that Dr. Schwarz may find time in his busy speaking schedule to produce others.

It is my own personal conviction that Dr. Schwarz is, so far as the Communistic peril is concerned, the "man of the hour" for the U.S.A. I know of no one who so admirably combines such a penetrating and profound insight into the philosophy of Communism with such a plethora of gifts in the fields of scholarship, logic and rhetoric. If anyone can be used of God to penetrate the monumentally naive, self complacency and to destroy the colossal illusion of security in America, this man gives such promise. His presentation of the imminent peril to the whole world of this almost irresistible malignant force is nothing short of terrifying.

In this effort all God fearing people and all loyal patriotic Americans should be vitally interested. Unless a new type of Christian discipleship arises speedily to answer the challenge of Communistic dedication, our American brand of Christianity is destined to be ignominiously displaced by Anti-christ's religion, Communism.

The Christian Answer to COMMUNISM

First Essential in Christian Approach: To Understand Its Innate Malignancy

IT is now generally recognized in Western Christian circles that Communism is an evil system. Even those who previously looked with sympathy and tolerant approval upon what they were pleased to call "the great Russian social experiment are now crying out against its excesses. As the true features of life inside Communist territory have become better known, as the hordes of terrified refugees streaming out wherever the slightest chance of escape into the western world exists bring the stories of the incredible cruelty, barbarity, and contempt for life that exists in the Communist controlled countries; as the armed might of the Soviet world brings ever nearer the threat of war, death and destruction; many previous supporters turn from Communism in loathing and in fear. It remains nevertheless true that the turn from Communism in many cases is very superficial and is related not to the basic Communist beliefs but to the external manifestations of the Communist terror.

The failure to understand the essentially evil essence of Communism reveals itself in many ways. One example is the strange case of Communist Tito of Yugoslavia. While Stalin was execrated and condemned with the greatest versatility of expression imaginable, Tito has in many cases become respected and revered, and recently we saw the strange spectacle of England's Queen bestowing her gracious hospitality upon this man. Visiting teams of ecclesiastics return from Yugoslavia feasted and feted by the Communists to present glowing reports of religious freedom, social progress and universal happiness in the

Tito stronghold. Forgotten it is that similar teams brought back equally or more glowing reports in the 1930's from Soviet Russia itself. Thus one prominent church leader almost worshipped by many, likened Russia to the man in the parable who said he would not do the Lord's will and then went and did it while he likened us to the man who proclaimed with his lips his willingness to do the Master's bidding but who denied his words by his acts. And another, was so impressed by what he saw that his book, "Churchman in the Soviet Union" was circulated with glee by the Communist Party of Illinois. The present embarrassment of these gentlemen should be remembered by the present apologists of Titoist Communism.

To judge any Communist Country by what is seen on a fleeting visit is akin to a man visiting a Tuberculosis Sanitorium, becoming impressed with the flowers, the snowy linen and the smiling nurses and returning with the pronouncement: ""There must be something good in Tuberculosis. I saw the prettiest flowers and the finest plumbing I have ever seen." Questioned about the Tuberculosis germ he would truthfully say that he did not see one germ in his entire inspection. Asked whether he visited prepared wards or if he investigated the mortuary and sputum room he would reply that he made the usual visit and maybe he didn't see everything but what he did see was good. Such a report would be understandable in a layman but inexcusible in a Physician. It is his duty to see beneath the surface to the hidden forces that govern the life of the suffering from Tuberculosis and which, if unchecked, terminate in emaciation, hemorrhage and death. To be deceived by the healthy appearance of the flushed cheeks, the sanguine and cheerful demeanour and the excellent environment that characterize so many tuberculosis sufferers would be misconduct of an extreme degree.

What can we then say of these, proclaimed Christian leaders, who so signally fail to look beneath the surface of Communist material claims to the evil heart of malignant materialistic atheism that lurks beneath. To use

another medical analogy they are like doctors who believe that Cancer is bad because once it ulcerates through the skin it is invaded by lurking pathological germs and becomes associated with a spreading inflammation, and pouring pus and blood it changes from a painless unobtrusive lump to an agonizing ulcer with a filthy ooze and noxious effluvium. Until that stage is reached they do not consider cancer evil. They have no knowledge of the laws of its being and cannot predict what a malignant future will emerge from the womb of the quiescent present.

All Forms of Communism Equally Malignant

Communism is evil because of the inner nature of its own being, and its manifestations of murder, duplicity, slavery and endless torture springs from that nature as inevitably as death springs from cancer. Titoist Communism has all the essential features of Stalinist Communism. Both are Marxist Lennist, both believe in Historical and Dialectical Materialism, both teach inevitable bloody revolution and ultimate Communist world Conquest, both are built upon the triune doctrines of Atheism, Materialism, and Economic Determinism. Essentially the difference is that between a vast exudative ulcerative Cancer in its terminal phase of agony and incipient death, and a small unobtrusive growth of a relatively early stage. Viewed dynamically as a progress both are equally evil because of their nature of rebellion against the body and dedication to their own ends. Communism is evil because of its rebellion against God; its proud and boastful atheism and its degradation of man to the level of a beast of the field. A good description of Communism and Communists is found in Romans 3:11-18 "There is none that understandeth, there is none that seeketh God. They are all gone out of the way, they are together become unprofitable; there is none that doeth good, no not one. Their throat is an open sepulchre; with their tongues they have used deceit; the poison of asps is under their lips: Whose mouth is full of cursing and bitterness: Their feet are

swift to shed blood: Destruction and misery are in their ways: And the way of peace have they not known: There is no fear of God before their eyes." **The first essential in the Christian approach to Communism is to understand this central fact.**

No Magic Formula for Cure

At this point we may pause to consider what is meant by "Answer" to Communism. Wherever I speak on this subject one question is inevitably asked; "What is your answer". When interviewed by newspaper reporters they invaribly want an answer to such questions as, "Should we atom bomb Moscow immedately." "What immediate practical steps can we take." They are frequently impatient over any discussion of the nature of Communism, the inherent laws of its development and they want to short circuit the whole subject by an immediate "answer" to the many imminent and perplexing practical problems of the moment. Others who ask for an answer really mean; "Please give us some comforting and reassuring words that we will be able to deal with this menace without too much trouble; without great disruption of my social and business life; without blood, tears, sweat and death." They long for an easy solution to be magically produced.

Understanding the Inescapable Minimum

To these people I am invariably a disappointment. I have no easy, moderately priced answer to give. The Christian answer follows the words of our Lord, "Whosoever would come after me, let him deny himself, take up his Cross daily, and follow me." There is no easier and less dangerous pathway. To the former I reply, "It is not permissible in a democracy to give conclusions before examining premises. The very system of democratic government depends upon an enlightened and understanding people delegating authority to freely chosen representatives to implement the programme agreed upon by the majority. Understanding is the inescapable minimum of intelligent action. There is no substitute for knowledge.

We elect our government in our own image. An ignorant people will elect an ignorant government, an immoral people an immoral government and a cowardly people a cowardly government. Thus the cowardly acts of a government are the revelation of the unfitness of a people to survive. The answer must be sought diligently, and intelligently; and, when found, must be accepted with courage, however unpleasant the answer may be.

Three essential features of the Christian answer to Communism are:

(1) Education
(2) Evangelism
(3) Dedication

EDUCATION

Marx's "Discovery" of the Class War

Between Communism and the remainder of the world there exists a state of war. The Communists are at war against God, against the dignity and freedom of man, against government of the people, by the people, for the people. This war arises out of the inner mind of Communism; its Philosophy of Dialectical Materialism. A derivative of this philosophy is that this state of war is in the nature of being itself. The Conviction of the Communist is that the state of war exists independently of the volition of the warring parties, being fixed by omnipotent material forces. Those who judge by flimsy superficialities give different dates for the commencement of this war. Some choose the date of the Rape of Czechoslovakia, others the Berlin Blockade, and yet others the outbreak of hostilities in Korea. There are those so naive that they believe that if an armistice in Korea is achieved the war with Communism will cease. The state of war is a product of the mind of Communism itself. Communism believes that Karl Marx, in his scientfic research into national and international relations **"discovered"** the class war. Just as Isaac Newton, observing the variety of natural phenomena and searching for a universal explanation that would interpret

them, made the epoch-making discovery of the Law of Gravity, so Karl Marx out of an intense analytical investigation of the conflicts and relations of society discovered this Class War. The Communists claim they did not decide upon it; they did not declare it, but being scientists they recognize its presence and act in accordance with it. In relation to it no armistice or peace talks have any fundamental importance. It cannot be abolished by any act or agreement on the part of men of different nations. Individuals may fall by the wayside in the conflict, but the war goes on. Battles may be fought with one or other side gaining temporary advantages but no truce is desirable or possible. The only possible termination of hostilities is the culmination of the historic will, the total victory of the Communist forces throughout the world with the utter eclipse of what they are pleased to term the bourgeoise, meaning democracy, religion and human liberty. This is the will of history. This fundamental belief in the mind of every Communist automatically produces a state of war which we have no way of avoiding. The Communist war began when the idea entered the mind of the first Communist. The war of cancer against the body began with the coming into being of the first cancer cell and can only terminate with the total destruction of either the Cancer or the body, and so the war between Communism and liberty can only terminate in total victory for one and utter eclipse for the other. The war may at first be hidden, unobtrusive but symptomless but it is infinitely real nevertheless. As long as the Communist idea prevails in the mind of one man true peace is impossible.

A Forgotten Cardinal Principle

A cardinal rule of warfare is, "know your enemy." A tremendous programme of research and investigation is undertaken in any conflict in an attempt to ascertain the strategic ideas of the opponent, the laws according to which he operates, his strength and his weakness. This applies also to contests involved in sports. So valuable can

a knowledge of the tactics of the opposing team be that in some football leagues the number of times observers may be sent to study the play of a future opponent is legally limited. In this conflict, "Knowledge is Power".

Unfortunately in this central war of our time this cardinal rule has either been forgotten or ignored. Opposition to Communism is widespread today but ignorance is even more widespread. I have the privilege of speaking at many civic and service clubs and frequently the Chairman of the meeting will remark as follows:
"There are only two things about Communism; either you are for it or you are against it. I am against it." With great restraint I endeavour to smile back as though he had made an intelligent remark. Actually such a statement is akin to the Chairman for a Medical meeting saying to a speaker on Poliamyelitis; "There are only two things about Polio, either you're for it, or you're against it; I'm against it." Those who are significantly against Polio are men who have dedicated their lives to study, research, coordination of accumulated knowledge and courageous experimentation so that at long last, very favourable news has come about a vaccine to prevent this dread scourge. To be against Polio or Communism is naught, to be intelligently against it is much. Ignorant opposition is frequently very valuable service to the Communist cause. **Understanding is the irreducible minimum of intelligent opposition.** We need education, education again and yet more education in the campaign to combat this monstrous evil.

Communist Capitalization of our Abysmal Ignorance

The Communists have been successful beyond anything conceived possible because of this ignorance which exists in every phase of our society. I know of no walk of life where knowledge of the mind and will of Communism has even approached the minimum necessary to cope with the insidious schemes and intrigues of the enemy. From personal experience I can speak of amazing and fatuous mis-

of dollars into armaments while much less invested in a programme of education, evangelism and dedication could pay unprecedented dividends in internal national security. A sense of stewardship akin to that manifested by the Communists is needed as an evidence of a genuinely aroused and awakened Christian people.

Communism Martyr Spirit Must be Matched by Followers of Christ

The Communist threat is very real. Its danger cannot be exaggerated. In the last few years it has put to death millions of Christians. It is highly probable that millions more will be called upon to seal their testimony with their blood in the very near future. If we are to face the firing squads of the enemy or to receive the special gift of a soft-nosed bullet through the back of our necks spattering our brains and faces against a bloody wall it does not mean that Communism has triumphed and that the Christians have no answer to it. When the early Christian martyrs were fed to the lions and put to the sword of the gladiators that did not mean that the Christians had no answer to the pagan excesses of Rome. We have an answer, rich in comfort, glorious in assurance and that is the certainty of the Resurrection to life of all who die in the faith of Christ. The Apostle Paul could say, "For me to live is Christ, and to die is gain". Phil. 1:21. O death, Where is thy sting? O grave, where is thy victory? . . . Thanks be unto God who causes us to triumph through our Lord Jesus Christ. I Cor. 15:55,57.

If we be dead with Christ we shall also live with Him. II Timothy 2:11.

Christians! to arms. The enemy is at the gate. Buckle on the armour of the Christian and forth to the battle. With education, evangelism and dedication let us smite the Communist foe and if necessary give our lives in this noble Cause. With courageous yet humble hearts, intelligent yet prayerful minds and dedicated indomitable wills we cry "We shall not yield! Lift high the bloodstained banner of the Cross and on to Victory."

STEWARDSHIP

Communist Standards of Stewardship Shame Christian Standards of Stewardship

The Communist could say, "Half of my income I give to the Party." How many Christians can match that. Most do not even pay the minimum tithe or tenth to the work of God. Example after example could be quoted of sacrificial giving by the Communists and their supporters that far outstrip anything of an organized nature the Church of God can show. We need to relearn the lesson of our Lord that the amount of our giving is determined by how much we have left. The calls that come daily to Christian people are many and varied and many respond sacrifially. It nevertheless remains true that the vast majority of Christians maintain a standard of living that would be regarded as extremely extravagant elsewhere in the world. We have yet to learn the lesson of self-sacrifice. We need to heed the command, "Endure hardship as a good servant of Jesus Christ." II Timothy 2:3. Many pastors and church officials have the viewpoint that there is a certain pool of money in the church. If an appeal comes for a cause however worthy and draws off some of this money, there is less left for local needs and these consequently suffer. It can be proved by countless instances how false this premise is. Many a church, bowed down with a burden of debt has in faith adopted a courageous policy of putting the needs of others first and giving to foreign missions and needy causes before considering their own needs. Almost invariably as their gifts to others increase the amount coming in for local needs miraculously increases. We must give to receive. The Lord loveth a cheerful giver. II Cor. 9:7. Christian people must accept the challenge of the financial support of an organization to combat Communism, and they will be blessed beyond measure. Many industrial firms and businesses should see in such work an investment to preserve their whole structure. America is pouring countless millions and billions

special provision be made for such members; that they should be admitted provided they were in full agreement with the Aims, policy and programme of the party and prepared to support it with their money and personal service wherever possible. Lenin was obdurate. He scornfully rejected such membership criteria, contending that it would prove a weakness in the iron discipline, the unified will, the monolithic structure of the party. He said that anyone who weakens in the slightest degree the iron discipline of the party is our enemy. Lenin secured a majority for his motion; the Russian word for majority is Bolshevik and thus the followers of Lenin came to be known as the Bolsheviks. The Russian word for minority is Menshevik and the followers of Martov were known as the Mensheviks. Thus Bolshevism or Communism was born on an organizational principle and the Communists have proved themselves superlative organizers, organizers of Revolution, terror, war, oppression, sedition and intrigue.

Similarly the Christian forces opposing Communism must be organized and disciplined. Organization is no substitute for life but it provides the engine within which the gasoline of conviction, consecration and courage may move the mountain of lethargy, self-indulgence and ignorance which provide the inflammable debris through which the Communist fire is consuming the earth. The organization must be dedicated to truth, not unity. It must be an organization of like-minded, clearsighted, self-renouncing, Bible-believing Christians who can channel their corporate energies to definite goals. A Unity of Theological Contradictions and Ecclesiastical Opposites in a programme of the lowest common denominator of faith and action such as that represented in the World Council of Churches or the United Nations is a parody of the true Christian organization needed desperately to combat Communism. Organization, like fire, is a good servant but a bad master. Such an organization of consecrated Christians must be built and fired by the Spirit of God in this tremendous battle.

"Study to show thyself approved unto God; a workman that needeth not to be ashamed; rightly discerning the word of truth." II Timothy 2:15.

A known Communist was met by an acquaintance in San Francisco and was asked where he was going. He replied he was going to a meeting. "What! at midnight", came the surprised reply. "there won't be anyone there." "Have no doubt about it; everyone who should be there will be there. One third of my day I work; one third of my day I sleep and attend to my personal needs. One third of my day I give to Communism. Half of my income I give to the Party". Here we have the characteristics illustrated that are a challenge to every Christian.

The Disciplined Life

Communism is the triumph of organization. It is not generally known that Bolshevism which has become the Communism threatening the world today originated in a principle of organization, and not in a point of doctrine. In 1903 the Congress of the Russian Social Democratic Party was held in Brussels, Belgium. Later, owing to police pressure it moved to the historic haven of refugees, London, England. At this Congress Lenin split the movement on a motion concerning organization. He moved that no one be eligible for Party membership unless he served on a disciplined capacity in one of the Party organizations, that there be no loose membership, no membership at large. The sole gateway to the Party must be controlled and criticized in one of the Party organizations. The Party must have absolute control over every individual in its ranks. With this Motion Lenin invented Faccism, later to be copied by Mussolini and Hitler. The opponent of Lenin was Martov who agreed in principle with what Lenin said but who contended that there were certain individuals, e.g., members of the Aristocracy, University Professors, and Government officials who would be embarrassed by having to work in a humble supervised capacity in one of the Party organizations. He moved that

used to like them very much, but since I joined the Communist Party two years ago, I have been so busy studying Philosophy, attending meetings and distributing literature that I have never had time to go to the movies once." This story illustrates well certain Communist principles.

Personal Indulgences

Though not considered wrong in themselves must disappear before the greatness of the task of winning the world. Movie attendance was not frowned upon in its own right; it was a form of indulgence that no Communist could allow to take time that could so fruitfully be spent in productive activity. This is an image of the Message of the Apostle Paul, "Wherefore seeing we also are compassed about with so great a cloud of witnesses, let us lay aside every weight, and the sin which doth so easily beset us, and let us run with patience the race that is set before us;" Heb. 12:1. "No man that warreth entangleth himself with the affairs of this life that he may please Him who hath chosen him to be a soldier." II Tim. 2:4.

The Emphasis Was Upon the Study of Philosophy

No one will rise to any height in the communist ranks who has not a profound understanding of the intricacies of the philosophy of Dialectical Materialism which underlines and motivates their whole programme. Most people find the perplexities of Philosophy dull, boring and incomprehensible. So are the mathematical equations of Albert Einstein to the vast majority. Yet, from these and other equally perplexing equations was built an atom bomb which burst upon the world in a flash of searing flame, a clap of intense thunder, a mushrooming cloud of poisonous radio active gases and the physical extermination of nearly 100,000 human souls. The world lives in terror of the power that was unleashed by the Natural Philosophy of the Atomic Scientists. The world likewise stands in terror of the hideous power unleashed by the Philosophy of Dialetic Materialism. Every Communist is a student. Every one warring against them must likewise be a student.

to kill myself I would do it just as willingly." To be a Communist is to accept a suspended death sentence which the Party can call for at any moment. Lenin defined the Communists as, "Dead men on furlough." In his magnificent novel "Darkness at Noon", Arthur Koestler presents the dilemma of the Communist when the Party to which he has dedicated his life and in obedience to which he has sacrificed many others, turns and demands his own sacrifice. There is no alternative but to obey; the desired confession is made; the service rendered; the character built up so heroically in struggle is destroyed; the name becomes a vile epithet in place of a word of heroic glory and death is willingly accepted. The good Communist seeks to discourage the use of the first personal pronoun, singular; this is in revolt against what he terms the "Personal Illusion." To serve without vanity and to the ultimate degree is the motive of every true Communist.

Communist Consecration Shames Christian Discipleship

This Communist dedication embraces every phase of being. The Communists despise the mere activist who does not mould his deeds upon a profound theoretical understanding. The Communists preach and practice a synthesis of theory and activity, and this is in part the cornerstone of their success. Some years ago I was invited to visit a town south of the big metropolis of Sydney, Australia to address a Methodist Men's Brotherhood on the subject of Communism. At the conclusion of the address one of the men came to me with this story: "Some time ago we scheduled a debate in our Christian Endeavour Society on Communism. Before giving my address I thought I had best find out something about Communism so I visited the Communist book store in Sydney. The attendant who served me was an eighteen-year-old girl. I said to her, 'I desire to learn something about Communism; what books do you advise'? She replied, 'We have a meeting of the Party tonight; why don't you come along'? 'I would like to very much but I'm afraid I can't. I promised my wife I would take her to the movies.' 'Yes, the movies; I

good Communist" by Lin Shao-Chi, the Vice-Premier of Communist China; "Whether or not a Communist Party Member can absolutely and unconditionally subordinate his personal interests to the Party's interests under all circumstances is the criterion with which to test his loyalty to the Party, to the Revolution and to the Communist Cause." P. 50.

"To sacrifice one's personal interests and even one's life without the slightest hesitation and even with a feeling of happiness, for the cause of the Party, for class and national liberation and for the emancipation of mankind is the highest manifestation of Communist ethics. This is a Party member's highest manifestation of principle. This is the manifestation of the purity of proletarian ideology of a party member. P. 51, or,

"Our Party members should not have independent aims of their own such as personal position, individual heroism and so forth." P. 51.

Absolute Utterness of Antichrist Standard of Discipleship

The Communists do not merely propose such dedication they act it. Their aim is to utterly merge their identity in the higher unit, the Party. The individual is fallible and prone to error, the party is infallible and all wise; the individual is weak and subject to defeat; the Party is mighty and invincible; the individual Communist may die by the wayside, but the Party marches on triumphantly to certain foreordained victory throughout the whole world. The true Communist lives his life in utter obedience to the mind and will of the Party. At its slightest wish he will lie, cheat, or kill; he will inflict or suffer the most intense torture; the individual is nought, the Party is all.

Dead Men on Furlough

Evangelist Billy Graham tells of a University forum he conducted in Paris at which a young French Communist said, "If the Communist Party told me to kill my mother I would kill her without batting an eyelid." He could truthfully have added, "If the Communist Party told me

intervention and national salvation from the Communist threat. Evangelism is a vital part of any effective anti-Communist Crusade.

Evangelism, the "Trigger" Mechanism

Evangelism must be personal as well as that of large gatherings. Every enlisted anti-Communist who has found Christ as Saviour must immediately endeavour to enlist others. This he must do by first bringing them to Christ. This is God's method of Multiplication. Personal and mass evangelism can set up a chain reaction that can purge the national life of its sin and materialism, its shallow optimism, its broken homes and broken lives and bring the nation to its knees before God. In this struggle the materialistic odds are heavily against us. We are outnumbered, the leadership of the enemy has been infinitely more enlightened, consistent and effective than our own; although at the moment we have a wide margin in technical skill and material production such superiority will not last forever and the dynamic situation as seen by the Communists involves the conquest of another 700,000,000 in Asia, then Africa and the remainder of Europe when every material advantage will be heavily in their favour. Our one certain asset is the Power and sovereignity of God. If God is not for us then we are indeed lost. The avenue to mobilize the power of God in this conflict is to evangelize. Evangelism is the trigger mechanism to detonate the mightest power the world can ever know, the power of Almighty God. Evangelism is to education what blood is to flesh, it brings life. We must evangelize.

DEDICATION

Discipleship a la Antichrist

The triumphs of Communism throughout the world would have been impossible without the limitless dedication of the Communist members of every nation. This dedication is accepted as the normal status quo of a Communist. I will quote one or two extracts from, "How to be a

and Economic Determinism of Secular education. If the premises on which Communism is built are accepted there is an insoluble logical dilemma in rejecting its conclusions. Godless opposition to Communism is a logical monstrosity, nevertheless many of the most vocal opponents of Communism are practically if not theoretically Atheistic. Communism occupies the vacuum produced by the destruction of the belief in the Supernatural and faith in God by Scientific Materialism. Nature abhors a vacuum. The best way to enlist anti-Communist fighters is to enlist them in the Army of Jesus. It has been my privilege to address many secular gatherings. It is always my endeavour to show such gatherings the logical connections between Atheism and Communism. There is also a historical link between liberal theology, Modernism and Communism. A really fruitful anti-Communist Crusade must have an evangelistic heart.

After every meeting I am asked the question, "What can we do?" The questioner usually has in mind some dramatic adventurous act, or maybe some political pressure that can be implemented without great personal sacrifice. He may be somewhat disappointed in my reply, "You can come to God." You can live for Godliness as the Communists live for Godlessness. There is only one way to come to God and that is through the Lord Jesus Christ. Jesus said, "I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father but by me." John 14:6. To come to Christ one must repent and turn from sin, acknowledge that one is a sinner and accept by faith the Salvation of Christ, purchased through the Sacrifice of Himself on Calvary's Cross. When a sinner comes in believing faith to Christ, God accepts him, forgives his sin, grants him full and complete forgiveness, records his name in the Lamb's book of life and gives him a new birth so that he becomes a new creature in Christ, a child of God. God will now hear and answer prayer and he can add his prayer to those of other praying Christians that God will bring to pass a mighty revival that repentance may bring divine

tion that when the moment was ripe the vast majority of the Indians educated in Christian schools, even the professing Christians, would turn to Communism. In China the fruit of the liberal Missions and Mission Schools was of inestimable service to the Communist cause. American Bible-believing Christians gave sacrificially to mission boards to send missionaries, and to build schools, hospitals and orphanages in China. The boards sent out many liberal or Modernist Missionaries. These taught and fostered unbelief and concentrated on Social reform, with the emphasis on "Social" as in Socialism. Many of those taught at these schools became Communists and were instrumental in conquering China confiscating the schools, hospitals and orphanages, expelling the missionaries, exterminating the native Christians and now they are engaged in the slaughter of American boys in Korea in anticipation of the day when they will conquer this country and destroy for all time the Christian faith that gave so generously to their need. Thus is the cycle complete. Many Mission College principals say, "We acknowledge the truth of what you say. But how are we to implement it? Where do we get the text books for such a course? Who is qualified to serve as the instructor? As part of the Christian Answer to Communism, the books must be written and the professors taught that they may teach others. The principle of 2 Timothy 2:2 must be applied here, "And the things that thou hast heard of me among many witnesses, the same commit thou to faithful men, who shall be able to teach others also."

EVANGELISM

Primarily a Spiritual Conflict

Education is vitally necessary, but by itself it is inadequate. It must be accompanied by Evangelism. **Communism is dedicated Godlessness.** It originates in rejection of God. It is Reductio Ad Absurdum of Humanism. It is the logical end point of the Atheism, Materialistic Evolution

munism. I have yet to hear of any College that prepares Missionaries with any adequate and comprehensive course on the nature and strategy of Communism that will render them able to meet with efficiency the competition of the Communist emissaries for the minds of men. The Communists are coming into many areas in Africa in the guise of "applied Christianity", deceiving and seducing the native Christians, enlisting many active Christian workers and it is not an unknown experience for mission stations of long standing to be compelled to close before the ravages of the Communist attack.

In the Solomon Islands, the South Sea Evangelical mission built up a splendid work during half a Century. The American troops were engaged in the Solomons during the Pacific War. The Coloured Communists told the native Christians of a wonderful country that was devoted to their welfare and that was to send a fleet of boats to their shores rich in everything the heart of an islander could desire. In the meantime they were to reject the missionaries who had been sent by the white man to enslave them, to rebel against the island authorities and then the wonderful cargo would come. The native Christians finished up in prison and the work of fifty years was wrecked. The Communists are as clever and subtle as the arch deceiver Satan who transforms himself into an angel of light to deceive, if possible, the very elect. The missionaries find themselves completely at sea in the face of these tactics; and frequently they are discouraged and defeated.

Importance of Text Book Preparation

It is criminal to send missionaries to these fields without a course in the mind and strategy of Communism to enable them to anticipate, understand and defeat the Communist tactics. Today every mission field, both inside and outside the Iron Curtain is in grave danger. Speaking to a College Principal who had just returned from a Mission term in India, he told me it was his profound convic-

mentality. The variety and attractiveness of entertainment is such that no time for serious study and contemplation remains. Nevertheless the people must be reached with the message or we are lost. The Communists claim that this very fact, the unwillingness of our sensation crazed people for consistent thought, is the guarantee of their victory. The problem is to batter through the entertainment curtain that envelops the American people and to awaken them with the message.

A Sound Investment

Every modern means must be utilized to this end. The message must deluge the American home from the Radio, from Television, from School and Pulpit, from Magazine and Book. This will need considerable finance but no sounder investment of money could be made than in such a task. The wealthy corporations of America have set aside money for the maintenance and improvement of the American way of life, but it has in many instances fallen into the hands of clever yet sinister men to be used to destroy the very foundations on which American freedom is built. Christian money, American money should be invested in a vast education programme to preserve business, labour, the family, religion and America.

MISSIONARY EDUCATION

Communist Infiltration of Mission Fields

Of specific interest to the Missionary movement should such an educational programme be. The last missionary stronghold of the world is in this country. Every year thousands of dedicated Christians leave their homes and beloved country to take the Gospel of redeeming grace to the ends of the earth. American money supports the vast majority of Missionaries throughout the world. Most of these missionaries have spent years of their lives at College, Bible Institute or Seminary to prepare themselves for service in the countries to which they are called. Almost without exception the major organized enemy they have to meet on every mission field of the world is Com-

The Nature of the Education

I can hear it said that every college and University in the country has a course on Communism. Yes, but what a course! Communism is taught as a comparative political philosophy, on an objective basis so that the student may choose which system he prefers, Communism or American Democracy. The evil core of Communism is omitted, its delusions propagated, its pseudo-achievements glamorized. Communism should be taught as the Medical Course teaches Cancer—for the recognition and conquest of the disease. Communism should be taught as a vicious Social disease. It should be specifically indicated in advance that it is evil, abhorrent, hellish. The reason for education on Communism is not so that we may recognize its good features and emulate them, but that we may realize the nature of the danger in which we stand and take the appropriate actions to survive.

Education in a Democracy

In a democratic form of government it is not adequate that understanding be confined to one strata of society. The people are the final source of power and authority for action. The knowledge of the basic issues and principles involved must penetrate to the very core of the people; to the grass-roots. A people elects a government in its own image. If the people are ignorant they will be the victims of slogans and duplicity and elect ignorant representatives; an immoral people will elect rulers of a low moral calibre; democracy like water tends to find its own level. The education must be taken to the people and received by the people. This is no easy task, nevertheless it must be achieved.

Crashing the Curtain of Sensation

There are so many competing voices for the attention of the people. Every scientific mechanism is utilized to distract the citizen from consistent analytical thought. Sensation is a substitute for perception and a slogan for understanding. We are in danger of developing a comic strip

temptible political quackery.

Amazing Intellectual Stupor

There seems to be a protective barrier which prevents the most obvious truths with regard to the peril in which we stand from the Communist hordes penetrating into general consciousness. Prior to the recent election for President of the United States I conducted my personal poll of Los Angeles taxi drivers as to the probable victor. Whenever I entered a taxi I would say, "Who do you think will win the election." They almost all replied, "Stevenson". I then said, "It does not matter very much, does it?" In a rather puzzled voice the reply would come, "Why not?" The election has no direct bearing on the real problem confronting this country. Whether you elect Eisenhower or Stevenson, if you increase or reduce taxation, if you clean up the mess in Washington or the mess in Washington gets worse, if you jail every Communist and fellow-traveller in America; there remain 800,000,000 people, more than five for every person in the U.S.A., being scientifically conditioned, industrialized and militarized to put this country to the sword. It is truly amazing how many people have never thought of it. Surely it is the inescapable fact of our time and one on which we should ponder day and night. Whereas Hitler began his career of world conquest with 75,000,000, and Japan had approximately the same number, add to this that the number opposing the Communists is much less than the forces against Hitler and Japan and we get some realization of the severity of our plight. The Germans were not all Nazis. Whether the bullet that penetrates the brain is fired by a member of the Communist Party or by a man indoctrinated, controlled and trained by the Communists is relatively immaterial; it is a fatal occurrence in both cases.

Every section of American life is in need of sound education to awaken, to alert, and yes to frighten us into intelligent action.

A Major Misconception

It is amazing how the delusion lingers in academic, religious and labour circles that Communism is merely the revolt of workers against tyranny. In spite of the utterly irrefutable evidence to the contrary this belief lingers on. It ignores utterly the clear truth that the only countries that have fallen under Communist domination are those with a common border with another Communist Country. Since the Bolshevik conquest of Russia no country has spontaneously turned Communist. Surely the meanest intelligence should be able to answer these questions, "Is East Germany Communist and West Germany non-Communist because of economic conditions or because of the presence of the Red Army and proximity to Russia?" "Is North Korea Communist and South Korea non-Communist because of economic conditions or because of the proximity of Russia and Red China to North Korea?" If the economic conditions of the whole world vastly improved the Communist party would merely intensify its effort to come to power. In 1949 the country of Australia was at the very peak of prosperity but the Communist Conspiracy came within an inch of the conquest of the entire country. Communism is the scientific exploitation of communal force of any nature in the effort to bring a minority to absolute power. The early Communist leaders were middle class intellectuals and not children of labour. These fanatical religionists, for such the Communists really are, will certainly exploit economic hardship for their own purposes but that is by no means the only force they will exploit. They will endeavour to utilize any situation for their purposes. To this end they will lie, cheat, and betray and to do so actually becomes virtuous in their system of morality. They exploit nationalism, religion, colour greed, in fact, any and every force to which human nature is prone. To believe that Communism is primarily a revolt against poverty is to fall victim to the Marxist snare, and to teach that Communism can be stopped by the simple improvement in economic conditions is to fall to the level of con-

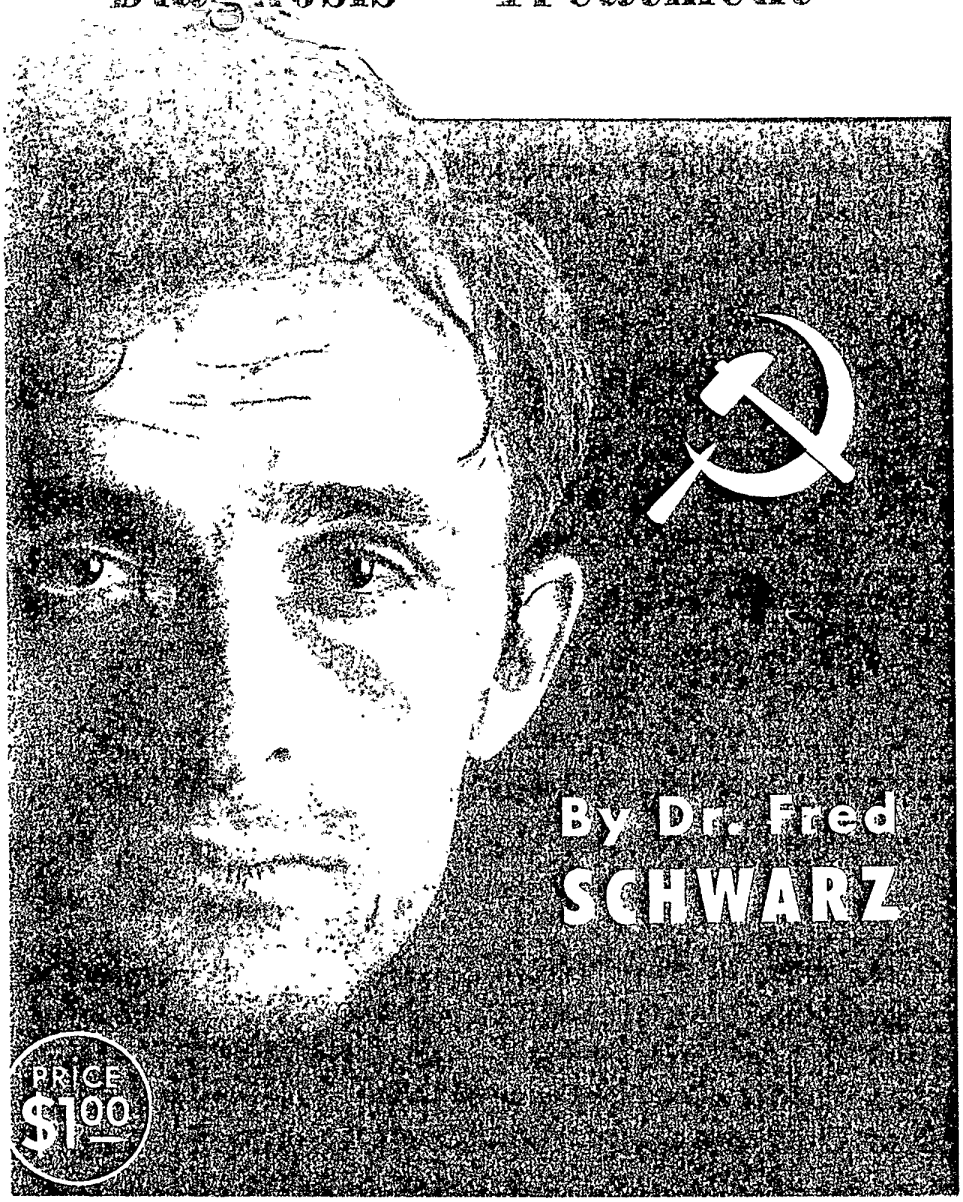
understanding of Communism in leaders of Congress, the Army, Government Officials, the Colleges and Universities, the Churches, the Missionaries and the average citizen that comprises this wonderful country of America. I will give a few illustrations taken at random from a remarkable collection.

In Tokio I addressed a meeting comprised of personnel of the Armed forces of the U.S.A. Following the address a man came up to me clad in the uniform of a high ranking officer of the Air Force. He was in command of one important branch of that strategic force. He said, "Why didn't I know this. This is important. I'm an educated and intelligent man. Why didn't I know?" The explanation is simple. In all courses he had been compelled to take to reach his high office, not one had got to the very heart of the inner thought life of Communism.

I was privileged to speak at an assembly of a certain State University of this country. I outlined the philosophy of the Dialetic and showed how it leads to the Communist conviction that the Class war is a state of being; therefore every Communist believes that a state of war exists now between Russia and America, and that we must take cognizance of the unpleasant facts that the Communists are waging this war and will continue to wage it, whatever we may do. This truth conflicted with the cherished delusions of the Professor of Social Science who was still in Marxist blinkers and believed that Communism was simply the spontaneous reaction of the masses to conditions of poverty. He invited me to address another meeting at which he pointed out that I was out of my field, invading his sacred domain, how dare I, a mere Physician and Surgeon dispute with him a Ph.D. I immediately invited him to come out and discuss the relation of Communism to Marxism, with special reference to the First, Second and Third internationals and the emergence of Bolshevism. With dramatic suddenness his truculence vanished and his bombast evaporated. It would have been hard to choose a subject on which he knew less.

COMMUNISM

Diagnosis • Treatment





DR. FRED C. SCHWARZ

about the author

ONE OF THE MOST INFORMED NON-COMMUNISTS IN THE WORLD ON THE SUBJECT OF COMMUNISM.

Born in Brisbane, Queensland, Australia, January 15, 1913.

Graduate of the University of Queensland, with Degrees in Science, Arts, Medicine, and Surgery. Former Professor in Mathematics and Science at The Queensland Teachers' College.

Now in general Medical and Surgical Practice in Sydney, Having Formerly Worked in Psychiatry.

A CHRISTIAN LAY PREACHER WITH A BACKGROUND OF SPECIAL STUDY IN THE BASIC TEXTS OF COMMUNISM.

A Number of Debates with Leading Anglo-Saxon Communists Have Resulted in a Sharpening of His Appreciation of Their Character, Mind, and Technique.

He Believes that Understanding is the Irreducible Minimum for Intelligent Counter-action.

Dr. Schwarz Finds a Rich Field of Illustrative Material in His Medical Experience. He uses this Material to Clarify the Issues Confronting this Country in the Conflict with the Disease of Communism.

He is Available for Engagements and can be Contacted Through Dr. W. E. Pietsch, Box 890, Long Beach 1, Calif.

CHRISTIAN ANTI-COMMUNISM CRUSADE
Houston Office
P. O. Box 6422, Phone JA 6-1545
Houston 6, Texas

COMMUNISM

Diagnosis and Treatment

by

DR. FRED SCHWARZ
EXECUTIVE DIRECTOR
CHRISTIAN ANTI-COMMUNISM CRUSADE
Long Beach 1, California
Box 890

The Story of Brainwashing

How Communism Conquers the Minds of Men



Originally Published by
WORLD VISION, INC.
1101 W. Colorado Boulevard
Los Angeles 41, California

LITHO IN U.S.A.

The vicious malignancy of Communism threatens to engulf our entire world. This authentic book is an overdue warning to Christians everywhere.

Bob Pierce
President of World Vision, Inc.

Diagnosis is the first step in the treatment of a disease. Dr. Schwarz has made a penetrating diagnosis of the pathological processes of Godless Communism. This knowledge is essential to every citizen of free America.

W. E. PIETSCH, D. D.
President, Christian Anti-Communism Crusade

TABLE OF CONTENTS

Introduction

PART I — DIAGNOSIS
- Chapter I — The Nature of Communism

PART II — SYMPTOMS
- Chapter I — The Communist Party
- Chapter II — Brainwashing
- Chapter III — "Feet Swift to Shed Blood"

PART III — PROGNOSIS
- Chapter I — The Forecast of Communism
- Chapter II — The Cure for Communism



INTRODUCTION

Communism is a disease: it is a disease of the body, of the mind, and of the spirit. It is a disease of the body because it has already destroyed the health and lives of many men. It is a disease of the mind because it is associated with a systematized delusional pattern of thought not susceptible to rational argument. It is a disease of the spirit because it denies the existence of God and the spirit of man, and degrades man to the level of the beast of the field.

To hate a disease may be admirable but it is inadequate for treatment. Multitudes within the community of free men and women hate Communism but their hatred is ineffective because they have no clear picture of the true nature of the disease process which they hate. It is entirely possible to hate Communism and to simultaneously serve its interests. There is no substitute for understanding as the minimal basis of intelligent counter-action.

Christians stand in a unique position in relation to Communism. To them has been entrusted the proclamation of the Gospel of the redeeming love of God in Christ. Their entire message rests upon the unshakable truth "In the beginning God . . ." They are empowered by the Spirit of God. Communism begins with the categorical statement *"There is no God."* There is thus an impassable gulf between the philosophies of Christianity and Communism which no amount of rationalization can bridge. The battle against Godlessness is the responsibility of the born again sons and daughters of the living God.

To wash our hands of the problems presented by Communism is not true spirituality. Christ had His hour of transfiguration on the mountain top but He returned to the valley to deal with the man possessed with demons. Communism presents practical problems that cannot be ignored, both on the mission field and in the Church at home. They must be faced fearlessly, lovingly, and intelligently.





"The author with members of the 83rd. Congress Club on the Capitol steps following his address to that group."

PART I

DIAGNOSIS

Chapter I

THE NATURE OF COMMUNISM

Before any disease can be adequately treated there are two essential preliminary steps. One we call diagnosis, the other prognosis. The term diagnosis is generally understood, and it is this aspect which we shall consider first.

The simple question, "What is Communism?" invariably receives a multitude of answers. To some the word suggests "living in common," and they refer to the situation in the early church described in Acts 2, verse 44 "And all that believed were together, and had all things common."

This situation is far removed from the present world movement known as Communism. This movement must be judged by its inherent character, philosophy, and deeds, and not by its name. The word "Studebaker" at one time indicated a covered wagon, but today it suggests a sleek, streamlined automobile. Communism is what its creators Karl Marx, Frederick Engels, Vladimir Lenin, and Joseph Stalin have stated and shown it to be, and what its present leaders manifest from day to day.

There are two methods that can be used in an effort to understand Communism. One is to observe its conduct, endeavor to interpret it, and arrive at an understanding of its basic principles and motivation. This is the method generally adopted. Unfortunately it results in a projection of the observer's past experience into the Communists' situation.

Frequently I am asked the question, "Have you been to Russia?" When I answer in the negative it is not difficult to sense the conviction that my knowledge must be fragmentary and inadequate. To these people I reply, "What do you think of the divisions in the cabinet of President Eisenhower?" They look at me with an expression of bewilderment. Many are scarcely aware that he has a cabinet. Those who are well aware of this are unlikely to be able to state immediately the full membership. The few who can give the membership of the cabinet have little idea of its subdivisions on basic policy questions. And yet, they live in a country with unique access to the deliberations of their leaders.

We have freedom of press and of radio. We still do not know much of what goes on. And yet the suggestion is that a visit to Russia would expose to us the heart of Communism. However, we would be unable to speak the language. We would be confronted by a people deficient in information and unwilling to speak freely of what they do know. It is possible to learn more about Communism in a few short hours, reading Communist theoretical text-books, than in many years of superficial observation.

The second method of understanding Communism is to stand where the Communists stand; to see what they believe; to catch the

vision that entices them; and to study the inherent laws of their philosophy and technique. Conduct can only be rationally interpreted when motivation is known. It is true today as ever it was that ". . . *as he thinketh in his heart, so is he. . . .*"—Proverbs 23:7.

Fortunately the Communists make no secret of what they believe. They have written it and rewritten it in books they willingly make available to all.

Communists believe that operating within history there is a progressive and directive force, and that this force has chosen that they shall conquer and rule the world. To doubt this is to blaspheme. This is repeated throughout their literature like a chorus. From numerous official pronouncements we submit three selections.

William Z. Foster is Chairman of the American Communist Party. His book, THE TWILIGHT OF WORLD CAPITALISM, was written in 1949. The dedication of the book states simply, "To my great grandson, Joseph Manley Kolko, who will live in a Communist United States."

Liu Shao Chi is the great Chinese Communist and theoretician. In 1939 he delivered a series of lectures to the Marxist-Leninist Institute in Yenan. In 1951 the Foreign Language Press of Peking published these lectures in the form of a book entitled, HOW TO BE A GOOD COMMUNIST. In this book he asks, "What is the fundamental and common duty of us Communist Party members? As everybody knows, it is to establish Communism, to transform the present world into a Communist world. . . ." Page 37. ". . . the cause of Communism has become a powerful invincible force throughout the world. There is not the slightest doubt that this force will continue to develop and advance and will win final and complete victory." Page 41.

NATIONALISM AND INTERNATIONALISM is the title of a book written by Liu Shao Chi in 1948, and published by the Foreign Languages Press of Peking. On page 24 of this book he says, "The liberated peoples now exceed one-fourth of the population of the globe. Undoubtedly the number of the liberated peoples from now on will grow day by day. It will not be long before the whole of mankind will be freed from imperialist domination. Whatever setbacks the struggle may endure, its general trend towards liberation is an inevitable and irresistible law of history."

We should note in passing that liberation is the Communist synonym for conquest and that the prophecy has been fulfilled in that since 1948 the conquered have increased from one-quarter to one-third of the population of the world.

The Communists believe that their victory is as certain as the rising of tomorrow morning's sun because it is the outcome of the same material laws of the universe.

World conquest is not an end in itself. It is an essential step towards the fulfillment of their great goal, *human regeneration*. Their program is not merely to change society, it is to redeem and perfect

human nature. This is the seductive dynamic of Communism which many of its alleged students have missed in its entirety. Frequently the question is raised, "Why do men of wealth, education, and religion turn to Communism?" The puzzled onlooker says, "I can well understand the appeal of Communism to the poor, to the ignorant, to the illiterate, to the oppressed. What I cannot understand is its appeal to the privileged, to those who have much to lose and little to gain by its triumph."

Once the goal of Communism is grasped there is little difficulty understanding its appeal. Evangelical Christians, above all others, should grasp the tremendous potency of its promise. God's program to regenerate mankind is thrilling to the true Christian. We rejoice when men and women come from darkness to light, from death to life, through the Gospel of Christ.

Even the unregenerate man responds to the appeal of creation and perfection. Men have dedicated their lives to the improvement of the quality of a plant. To create a finer breed of animals is a worthy life goal for any man. The Communists promise to perfect the entire human race—to blot out all evil and sin. They do not promise to convert selected drunkards and criminals, but to wipe out drunknessess and crime.

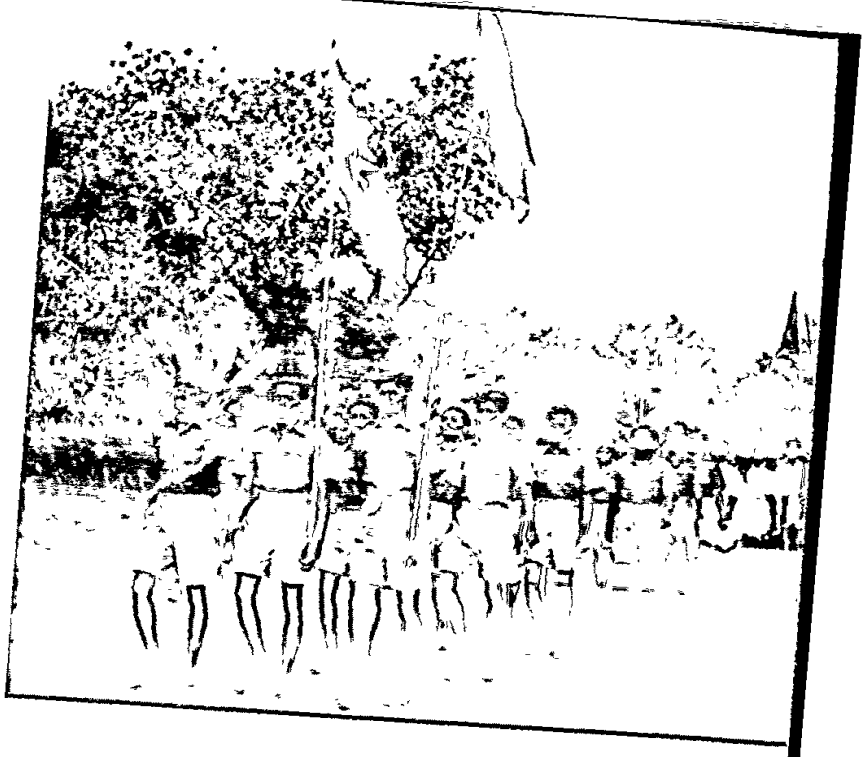
As Liu Shao Chi writes in HOW TO BE A GOOD COMMUNIST, "Is a Communist world good or not? We all know that it is very good. In such a world there will be no exploiters, oppressors, landlords, imperialists, capitalists, or fascists. There will be no oppressed and exploited people. In such a society all human beings will become unselfish and intelligent Communists with a high level of culture and technique. . . . The spirit of mutual assistance and mutual love will prevail among mankind." Page 38.

Communism is Satan's substitute for the redemption of Christ. It proposes regeneration without God. It would ". . . if it were possible . . . deceive the very elect." Many people are victims of this attractive Communist goal. To them it is closely akin to the Christian goal. It proposes a new heaven and a new earth wherein the redeemed shall dwell.

There is no form of thinking more dangerous than to judge a movement by its goal rather than its methods. Every charlatan and half-wit of history has had a good goal. The real question is not "How good is the goal?" but, "What are the methods advocated, and will these methods successfully bring the goal to pass?"

When the Communists are asked by what means they propose to regenerate the human race, they have a ready answer. "Science." They loudly affirm "We are scientists. Science has transformed the material world. Science has transformed the world of agriculture. We propose to use science to transform human nature itself. Thus will science graduate to maturity and receive its crown of greatest glory."

Once more this answer is very appealing. The achievements of science are truly miraculous. Few of us would willingly return to the



Communist youth of India on parade.



Billy Graham speaks to Indian Communist demonstrators on his recent world tour with Bob Pierce.

land of our forefathers, deficient in the scientific blessings we routinely accept. In particular this concept is very appealing to intelligent students in the glory of their youth. They become infatuated with scientific method and catch a vision of a limitless future in the service of this mistress. This explains why scientifically-minded students form the most susceptible group of people to Communism. The generally accepted idea that Communism is a working-class movement, originating in poverty and exploitation, is a fantasy.

Recently in Portland, Oregon, while collecting my laundry I mentioned to the clerk the frightening figure of Communist advance. He was sufficiently sensible to become frightened. In an excited voice he said, "We must do something, we must feed them. No man ever became a Communist on a full stomach."

I looked at him quietly for a moment, and replied, "I could mention Mark, Engels, Lenin, Stalin, Molotov, Bulganin, Mao Tse-tung, Liu Shao Chi, Hiss, and Whittaker Chambers. In truth, every outstanding world Communist figure became one, not as a son of toil, but as a student intellectual, materialist in philosophy, atheist in faith, and scientific in outlook. The vision that lures them is to remake the human race as the handmaidens of science."

Before being swept away with enthusiasm for this wondrous project a little further investigation is merited.

As scientists they openly acknowledge their dependence upon material and scientific laws. These laws must be obeyed. They are as follows:

There is no God. They are proudly, and unashamedly atheistic in theory and in practice. Their founder, Karl Marx, was an Atheist before he became a Communist. Atheism was his first and his last love. His greatest disciple, Vladimir Lenin, begins his textbook on religion with these words, "Atheism is a natural and inseparable portion of Marxism, of the theory and practice of scientific socialism."

When they deny God they simultaneously deny every value that originates with God. They deny moral law, the ten commandments, absolute standards of right and wrong, and truth and error. Man is left on the playing fields of the universe without an umpire, and without a book of rules. The winning side may make up the rules as they go along.

They blot out an entire civilization with its institutions, laws, traditions, and customs. It is impossible to exaggerate the far-reaching consequences of their atheism. God's Word clearly traces the consequences in the first and third chapters of Romans. The dreadful results of atheism painted here have been fulfilled in detail wherever the Communists have come to power throughout the world. Romans I, verses 21 to 32 paints this dreadful picture. We will consider certain verses.

"Because that, when they knew God, they glorified Him not as God, neither were thankful; but became vain in their imaginations,

and their foolish heart was darkened. Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools, and changed the glory of the uncorruptible God into an image made like to corruptible man, and to birds, and four-footed beasts, and creeping things. . . . Who changed the truth of God into a lie, and worshipped and served the creature more than the Creator, Who is blessed for ever."

In Romans, chapter 3, verses 14 to 18, we read things that go together as the night and day.

"Whose mouth is full of cursing and bitterness: Their feet are swift to shed blood: Destruction and misery are in their ways: And the way of peace have they not known: There is no fear of God before their eyes."

Man is a Material Animal. Having denied God, the Communists simultaneously deny *man as the special creation of God,* and are confronted with the question, "What is man? Whence did he come? Whither is he going? What significance has life, death, love, hate, joy, sorrow? What is man?"

The reply comes swiftly. "Man is a material machine; he is matter in motion, and nothing more. Man has no soul, no spirit, no significant individual value, no continuity of life, no heaven to gain nor hell to shun. Man is a beast."

The materialist scientist built a dog and kept it in a room at his home. When he opened the door and the lights shone on the mechanical eyes the dog moved forward and growled. On closing the door it moved back to its original position. When stroked along the back it wagged its tail.

The materialist scientists affirm that the only difference between this dog and a living pet is one of degree. There is no difference in kind. Both are totally describable in terms of the laws of chemistry and physics. The Communist goes a stage further and says that the only difference between the mechanical dog, the living dog, and the human being is one of degree. The human body is all that exists. Within this body a stomach secretes gastric juice, and a liver secretes bile. Within the complex mechanism known as the brain various electric currents flow, giving rise to the subjective sensations of emotion and thought. Understanding of the mechanics of the body will give one as complete control over its every feature as that which the engineer has over complex machinery. This applies even to memory, abstract thinking, and emotional love, and its manifestation is in the modern horror known as "brain-washing."

One of the three personalities who influenced Karl Marx most profoundly was Charles Darwin. The Communists accept without reserve the Darwinian evolutionary hypothesis to account for the origin of man.

The human species has emerged through countless generations, extending over millions of years, through the blind process of natural selection to its present honored position at the apex of the evolu-

tionary tree. Thus the Communists believe. We are the species *homo sapiens*. We are the first among the animals—but animals and no more.

Naturally this suggests to the scientific mind the possibility of improving the human species by the proven means applied to other animals. With admirable logical consistency the Communists do not shrink from the consequences of their belief.

In his book THE TWILIGHT OF WORLD CAPITALISM, William Z. Foster, Chairman of the American Communist Party, comes right out into the open. The climax of the book is the closing chapter, "The Advent of Socialist Man." This new man is the goal of all their effort. "But the biggest task of all is to improve the human species itself in an evolutionary sense . . . the laws of natural selection which built the marvelous complexities of plant and animal species no longer can work spontaneously. Henceforth the evolution of the human species must be done artificially, by the conscious action of man himself." In these words the grim truth is revealed and we can catch a whiff of gas from the death chambers. Shades of Adolph Hitler!

The Communists are confronted with the problem of the origin of those remarkable and unique qualities that differentiate man from the beast. That is, *the origin of consciousness, intelligence, language, religious faith, love, and character*. What are these qualities and how are they derived?

The co-worker of Karl Marx, Frederick Engels, claims that the genius of Marx attained its zenith in his discovery of the power that created all these things. In his preface to the Manifesto of the Communist Party he states that this discovery marked a new era in human well-being. Simply stated, this discovery is as follows. The qualities of intelligence, personality, character, religious faith, and morality, are formed by experiences received in the struggle for production. Man is merely a developed ape and the higher qualities of manhood are formed by his labor. Frederick Engels has written a classical pamphlet entitled "The Part Played by Labor in the Transition from Ape to Man."

This is the argument: Living consists of a struggle to procure food, clothing, and shelter—the basic needs of life. In primitive society the entire waking time of all members is devoted to this quest. With the invention of tools and other improvements in the means of production a temporary surplus of production is at times developed. This leads to the institution of private property. The possession of private property creates new attitudes of mind and character. Those few people who own private property form similar characteristics and become a class. Here we have the origin of that concept so important to Marxist thought—the *concept of class*. Once the class is formed it creates for itself a character and mind, and develops systems of law and ethics in its own interests.

As the mode of production improves different groups of people come to stand in a similar relationship to it, and thus the entire population becomes divided into classes.

The interests of these classes, generally speaking, are in conflict. Thus the idea of class conflict arose, and led to the Marxist "discovery" of the class war.

This conflict between classes is the dynamic of society and follows a definite path. Finally the Capitalist society develops in which two major classes are formed—the class of ownership and the class of labor. The class of ownership is called the bourgeoisie, while the class of labor is called the proletariat. The development of the productive forces has assured that ultimately the bourgeoisie shall be dispossessed and destroyed by the proletariat. Until this historic consummation is reached a state of war must exist between the two classes.

Within the class structure the institutions of society are built. Church and state emerge. Frederick Engels wrote a text-book THE ORIGIN OF THE FAMILY, PRIVATE PROPERTY, AND THE STATE. He claims that the family emerged late in the history of human development as a means for the transmission of private property. The natural conclusion is that when private property is abolished the family will be likewise. Fundamentally the Communists are the enemy of the family. For a period they may emphasize and use it, but their ultimate goal is clear; it must be destroyed.

This argument is summarized in the COMMUNIST MANIFESTO, page 47. (Foreign Languages Publishing House, Moscow.)

"On what foundation is the present family, the bourgeoisie family, based? On capital, on private gain. In its completely developed form this family exists only among the bourgeoisie. But this state of things finds its complement in the practical absence of the family among the proletarians, and in public prostitution.

"The bourgeoisie family will vanish as a matter of course when its complement vanishes, and both will vanish with the vanishing of capital.

"The bourgeoisie clap-trap about the family and education, about the hallowed co-relation of parent and child, becomes all the more disgusting, the more, by the action of Modern Industry, all family ties among the proletarians are torn asunder, and their children transformed into simple articles of commerce and instruments of labor."

How different the Communist picture of the origin of the family and its purpose from that revealed by God! In Ephesians 5:28 we read, "So ought men to love their wives as their own bodies. He that loveth his wife loveth himself." God ordained the family as a holy union of man and woman, united in love, and blessed with children, the fruit of love.

It is true that within Russia today family life is encouraged. Divorce, which once was a simple matter of signing a paper, is



Pastor Han June Myung tells of escape from Red execution. He and fellow prisoners were forced into caves over bodies of murdered comrades. Each man was shot in the head. Pastor Han was miraculously skipped. He escaped three days later when the entrance stone was dislodged by an allied bombardment.

now almost non-existent. The members of the Communist parties of other countries have become almost puritanical in their code of behavior. This does not indicate any basic change in the Communist attitude to the family. They discovered it was necessary to behave thus to increase their strength for world conquest. Having conquered the world they can then put their real program into effect.

Class society is divided into ruler and ruled, master and slave, possessor and dispossessed. The relationship between the master and the slave creates a slave mentality. They look up to the master as the figure of awe and power. From this master-slave relationship the figure of the great master, awesome and unlimited in power, emerges. Thus we reach *the concept of God.* To the Communists God does not exist, but the idea of God is the product of the class struggle. The function of the idea of God is to subdue and sedate the slaves that they may not revolt against their master. Thus religion becomes the opiate of the masses, something to be opposed and ultimately destroyed.

Again we reach the paradox that today in many countries the Communists are posing as the friends of religious freedom. The policy of the Communists to the church is threefold: to enslave, to utilize, and to destroy. This policy is usually manifest by a period of persecution followed by a period of apparently increased liberty of worship. During the period of persecution the established leaders of the churches are destroyed as political criminals, and in their place Communists or obedient subjects of Communism are installed. The graves of Russia are filled with the bodies of those who have sealed their testimony with their blood.

Communism is the enemy of all religion and specifically the enemy of the Church of God. This does not prevent them from apparently befriending the Church if they consider it suitable for their purpose. A certain evangelical pastor in Northern Italy was recently prevented by the authorities from conducting his evening Gospel service.

Immediately the Communist leader came to his aid. His attitude was, "Comrade, we will not allow this. We are constitutionally entitled to freedom of religion. Come with me." He then proceeded to conduct him to the Communist hall and the preacher delivered his Gospel message under the emblem of the hammer and sickle, and the benign smile of that matchless murderer, Joseph Stalin.

What is the explanation of this strange Communist conduct? Is it possible that they have relented in their opposition to and hatred of the Christian faith? To reach this conclusion would be to play right into the Communists' hands. They believe they must scientifically survey each local situation and take advantage of any conflicts for their own purpose. They must make temporary alliances. These alliances can be broken whenever there is a change in the situation and the erstwhile ally can be subsequently destroyed. In each situation the major enemy should be selected. The minor enemies are then cul-

tivated and assisted in the knowledge that once the major enemy is destroyed it will be a simple matter to dispose of the minor one. In this specific instance the major enemy is the Catholic Church. It is therefore sound Communist policy to befriend the evangelicals.

The success of this Communist stratagem is alarming. They transform themselves into angels of light who would, ". . . if it were possible . . . deceive the very elect." It is easy to understand how impressed the preacher, befriended by the Communists, would be. How difficult it would be to convince him that the Communists do *not* stand for religious freedom! He has had experience. He *knows* they do. Actions speak louder than words. Should the Communists come to power, how different the situation would be. He would likely be prevented, not only from preaching, but also from breathing!

Communism presents the practical problem, "Shall we do good that evil may come?" The local proposition that they present to seduce the Christian worker is frequently one which, considered in isolation, would merit whole-hearted support. This problem is particularly acute on the mission field. The Communists make special attempts to woo the outstanding mission converts with projects in tune with the Christian ethics they have been taught. The only defense is a thoroughly *awakened and alert Christian conscience,* and understanding quickened by the discernment of the Spirit of God.

Whatever facade of religious liberty may appear in Communist countries, of one thing we may rest assured: the children are being systematically indoctrinated in atheism and materialism. The Constitution of Soviet Russia specifically allows freedom of religious worship and freedom of anti-religious propaganda. No Sunday schools or evangelistic activities are allowed—merely the worship services of those older folk who have survived the reign of terror consequent to Communist conquest.

"And Jesus called a little child unto Him, and set him in the midst of them, and said, . . . 'But whoso shall offend one of these little ones which believe in Me, it were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck and that he were drowned in the depth of the sea.' "—Matthew 18:6. The condemnation of our Lord Jesus rests heavily upon Communists, who are determined to rob the children of the world of the Christ of Calvary. To every Christian, subject to the seductive wooing of the Communists in some appealing cause, the message of II Corinthians 6:14 to 18 comes with renewed force:

"Be ye not unequally yoked together with unbelievers: for what fellowship hath righteousness with unrighteousness? and what communion hath light with darkness? And what concord hath Christ with Belial? Or what part hath he that believeth with an infidel? And what agreement hath the temple of God with idols? for ye are the temple of the living God, as God hath said, I will dwell in them, and walk in them; and I will be their God, and they shall be My people. Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing, and I will receive you, and

will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be my sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty."

Even as the worshipping heart of man is formed from the class struggle, so is the entire *system of morality*. When the Communists deny God they simultaneously deny God's moral law. The Ten Commandments become an illustration of Class Morality, given to stop the Children of Israel from rebelling against their leaders.

Morality is Class Morality and our moral code is in reality simply a system of taboos in the interests of the exploiting classes. Each class develops its own morality. Lenin states "Proletarian morality is determined by the exigencies of the Class struggles." He is quite clear as to what this means; the Communist Party represents the interests of the Proletariat or the working class. History has willed that the proletariat shall come to power through revolution followed by dictatorship. Any action which advances the cause of the revolution and the dictatorship is good. Any action that hinders it is bad. This criterion applies not only to morality but to beauty, and as we shall see later, truth as well. If murder advances the cause of Communist conquest, it ceases to be murder and becomes good, just, and beautiful. The Communists do not do evil that good may come. To them good is represented by the triumph of the revolution and Communist dictatorship. Any action in this direction is by definition a good action.

If the circumstances justify it, deceit becomes moral and admirable. In his text-book, LEFT WING COMMUNISM AN INFANTILE DISORDER, referring to the Labor Unions, Lenin writes, "It is necessary . . . to resort to all sorts of devices, maneuvers, and illegal methods, to evasion and subterfuge in order to penetrate into the Trade Unions, to remain in them, and to carry on Communist work in them at all costs." To believe that to deceive is wrong is to be the pathetic victim bourgeoisie morality.

Jesting Pilate asked, "What is Truth?" Our Lord said, "I am the Way, the Truth, and the Life." He also said, "And ye shall know the Truth, and the Truth shall make you free." When the Communists deny God they deny the very existence of Truth, and it becomes the plaything of their purpose. Truth itself is a function of the class struggle and any statement favoring the revolution and dictatorship automatically becomes Truth.

The materialistic concept of consciousness opens to the Communists a realm in which they can create Truth by the simple process of a vote taken within the Communist Party. The emotional experience of conviction in association with a certain statement is to them merely the association of electronic brain impulses. It emerges from the storehouse of past experience.

The experience of the individual is limited whereas the experience of the Communist Party is limitless. It is the synthesis of the ultimate in human experience. Therefore truth emerges, not from the limited experience of one individual, but from the synthesis of human

experience represented by the Communist Party. Thus the vote of the highest committee of the Communist Party creates truth.

The entire Communist theory is built upon the assumption that characteristics acquired by activity during life can be passed on to the next generation, *i.e.*, the heritability of acquired characteristics. Engels in his book THE PART PLAYED BY LABOR IN THE TRANSITION FROM APE TO MAN (Foreign Languages Publishing House, Moscow, 1953), shows how this assumption is taken for granted:

"Thus the hand is not only the organ of labor, *it is also the product of labor*. Only by labor, by adaptation to ever new operations, by inheritance of the thus acquired special development of muscles, ligaments and, over longer periods of time, bones as well, and the ever-renewed employment of this inherited finesse in new, more and more complicated operations, has the human hand attained the high degree of perfection that has enabled it to conjure into being the paintings of a Raphael, the statues of a Thorwaldsen, the music of a Paganini."

Their edifice is on the verge of collapse when all modern scientific research indicates that muscular qualities acquired during life are not passed on to the offspring. The child of a weight-lifter with greatly developed muscles is no more likely to be born with large muscles than the child of the bank clerk.

A champion called Lysenko rushes into the fray to restore the crumbling ramparts of the Communist theory. He claims he has proved experimentally that characteristics acquired during life can be transmitted to the offspring. A furious debate ensues. Many leading Soviet geneticists, on the basis of a lifetime of scientific research, rise to refute the Lysenko claims. A verbatim report of the debate, published by the Communists themselves, fills a book of many hundred pages. The situation is resolved in a few lines. The denouement comes when Lysenko rises to make his concluding remarks: "Comrades, I feel it my duty to make the following pronouncement. The question is asked, in one of the notes handed to me, 'Has the Central Committee of the Party adopted any attitude to your report?' I wish to state the Central Committee of the Party has read my report and has approved it." (Prolonged applause, great ovation, all rise.)

A strange transformation comes over the scene. Those Soviet scientists, who on the basis of a lifetime of research have been opposing the viewpoint of Lysenko, share a common experience. During the night a crisis in their thinking takes place. The error of their previous position becomes revealed to them. On the following morning they ask permission to make statements. In these statements they unreservedly retract their former viewpoints. They tell how the truth of the Lysenko position is now clear to them. They dedicate their lives henceforth to the proclamation of *true* Soviet genetics.

The superficial observer says, "That's easy to understand. We've all read of the recantation of Gallileo who publicly renounced his theory of the rotation of the earth while according to reports, under



WIDE WORLD PHOTOS

ROK PFC Kim Hyon Muk was reunited with his mother after three years as a prisoner of the communists. Now he can return to his place in a society of free men.

his breath he muttered, 'But still it moves.' These men are merely being discreet. They know the consequences of unorthodoxy in a Communist country. They are pretending to agree with Lysenko to save their necks."

I suggest the answer goes much deeper than this. These scientists are not only scientists. They are Communists. As Communists they are committed to the supremacy of the Communist Party in all aspects of life. The mind of the Party is right. The will of the Party is absolute.

An understanding of the Communist definition of morality and truth solves the puzzle of apparent Communist *sincerity in hypocrisy.* The Communists are sincere and sincerity arms its possessor with a potent weapon. To many people the apparent Communist sincerity, in a hypocritical situation, is an indication of the superlative quality of their acting. This is not the case. Their sincerity is real. Let us consider the paradox of their world-wide agitation on behalf of the Rosenbergs.

Julius and Ethel Rosenberg were convicted by a jury of their peers, under the laws of the United States of America, of spying in war-time. They were sentenced to pay the supreme penalty. They were Communists of Jewish origin. Every civil liberty was given them. They exhausted the legal processes of the United States. Many separate appeals were made and rejected by the appropriate authorities. Several years elapsed before these legal steps were exhausted.

As soon as it became apparent that the Rosenbergs were not going to confess the part they had played, the Communist world unleashed a vast propaganda offensive on their behalf. They became heroic martyrs, victims of brutal anti-Semitism, convicted on the evidence of perjurers by an intimidated jury. Every device to stir the sympathy of the hearts of the people of the world was exploited. The name Rosenberg became a household word in every land. Rosenberg rallies were held in Peiping, in the mountains of Nepal, in backward Africa, as well as in literate Europe. In France numbers were killed while rioting on behalf of the Rosenbergs. Every Communist heart was breaking. Every Communist eye was flowing with tears because of the cruelty perpetrated against these two lovely people.

In the midst of this propaganda alleging anti-Semitism, the leading Jewish Communists of Czechoslovakia were suddenly arrested. These men were loyal and faithful Communists whose lives had been dedicated to the Communist cause. They became victims of this travesty that masquerades as "Justice" in Communist lands. They were accused and immediately convicted of a long list of incredible and impossible crimes, and in the space of two weeks suffered summary execution. The incongruity of the Communists screaming about the alleged anti-Semitism directed against the Rosenbergs and simultaneously murdering a far greater number of Jews in Czechoslovakia should have been obvious to all. One would expect even the case-hardened Communists to feel a little guilty at their obviously contra-

dictory position. There is no evidence of this sense of guilt. The campaign on behalf of the Rosenbergs waxed ever more furious.

What is the explanation of their apparent total oblivion to the inherent contradiction in their position? The true Communist was utterly sincere in his rejoicing at the execution of the Czechoslovakian Jews and in his heartbreak at the execution of the Rosenbergs. The execution of the Czechoslovakian Jews was a good act. The Jews were criminals. The evidence against them was true. Every Communist heart must rejoice at the triumph of "Justice"! In contrast the execution of the Rosenbergs was against the Communist goal of revolution and dictatorship. Thus it was an evil act. It follows that the Rosenbergs were guiltless. The evidence against them was perjury, given by evil men. Every Communist heart must feel the anguish of this hideous travesty of justice.

The Communists have officiated at the diabolical union of hypocrisy and sincerity and they have produced a bastard offspring of limitless evil.

Wherever a Communist speaks today the word "peace" will fall from his lips like snowflakes in a blizzard. Every Communist action is represented as motivated by a passionate love of peace, while the most benign actions of the free people are classified as "warmongering." While talking peace the Communists continue to build the vastest war machine ever known. They train every child in the grim and terrible business of war and disturb the peace of country after country. Once again they seem master hypocrites. Nevertheless, I venture to suggest that if a Communist were given a lie-detector test and asked, "Do you really want peace?" the lie-detector would indicate he was speaking the simple truth. The Communists sincerely believe themselves to be *"the people of peace."* They live for peace and will willingly die for peace.

We must hasten to explain that the peace so dear to the heart of the Communist is something entirely different from that which is dear to the heart of decent people throughout the world. The basic Marxist Communist doctrine is that everywhere in the world there exists a state of war known as the class war. They are not responsible for the existence of this war. It is an historical reality. Karl Marx discovered it as Newton discovered the law of gravity.

No act of theirs can abolish it. They can merely recognize its presence and cooperate with the historic purpose by fighting the class war with all their might. This war theoretically is between the two classes—the bourgeoisie and the proletariat. However, the bourgeoisie has recruited its armed vanguard, the government, with its army and police, while the proletariat has unconsciously elected the Communist Party to lead it in the battle. Thus within states there is war between the Communist Party and the government. In the process of history this war has changed from a national to an international plane. The Communist Party has come to power in Russia, in China, and in Eastern Europe. The bourgeoisie remains in power in Western Europe

and in America. The leadership of the bourgeoisie has fallen upon America. Therefore a state of war exists between Russia and America, and between China and America. Every act these Communist countries do they consider an act of war, and is designed to hasten its consummation.

Since war is the present state of being, what is peace? Peace is the consummation of this war in total Communist victory. This is the will of history. Since the Communist Party is ordained to bring this victory to pass, and thus establish peace, it is the party of peace and by definition can commit no war-like act. Every act that advances Communist victory is a peaceful act. Without hesitation they take a peaceful gun and put a peaceful bullet in the war-like brain of their enemy. They administer a peaceful death with burial, if any, in a peaceful grave. When the Communist armies advance with tanks, guns, bombs, and bayonets, littering the field with dead, it's the advance of the forces of peace.

We are reminded forcibly of the prophetic word of God, "For when they shall say, Peace and safety; then sudden destruction cometh upon them, as travail upon a woman with child; and they shall not escape."—I Thessalonians 5:3.

Communism now reaches a point of agreement with Christian theology. It concurs in the doctrine of the sinfulness of man. They agree that present human nature is depraved and utterly unfit to form the perfect society. They do not use the word "sinful," preferring terms such as degenerate or diseased. The cause of sin, however, is not to be found in the "fall" of man, but is merely the reflection in consciousness of the vicious labor relationships of the Capitalist system. Human sin can be eradicated only by the destruction of these labor relationships. The cause must be eradicated.

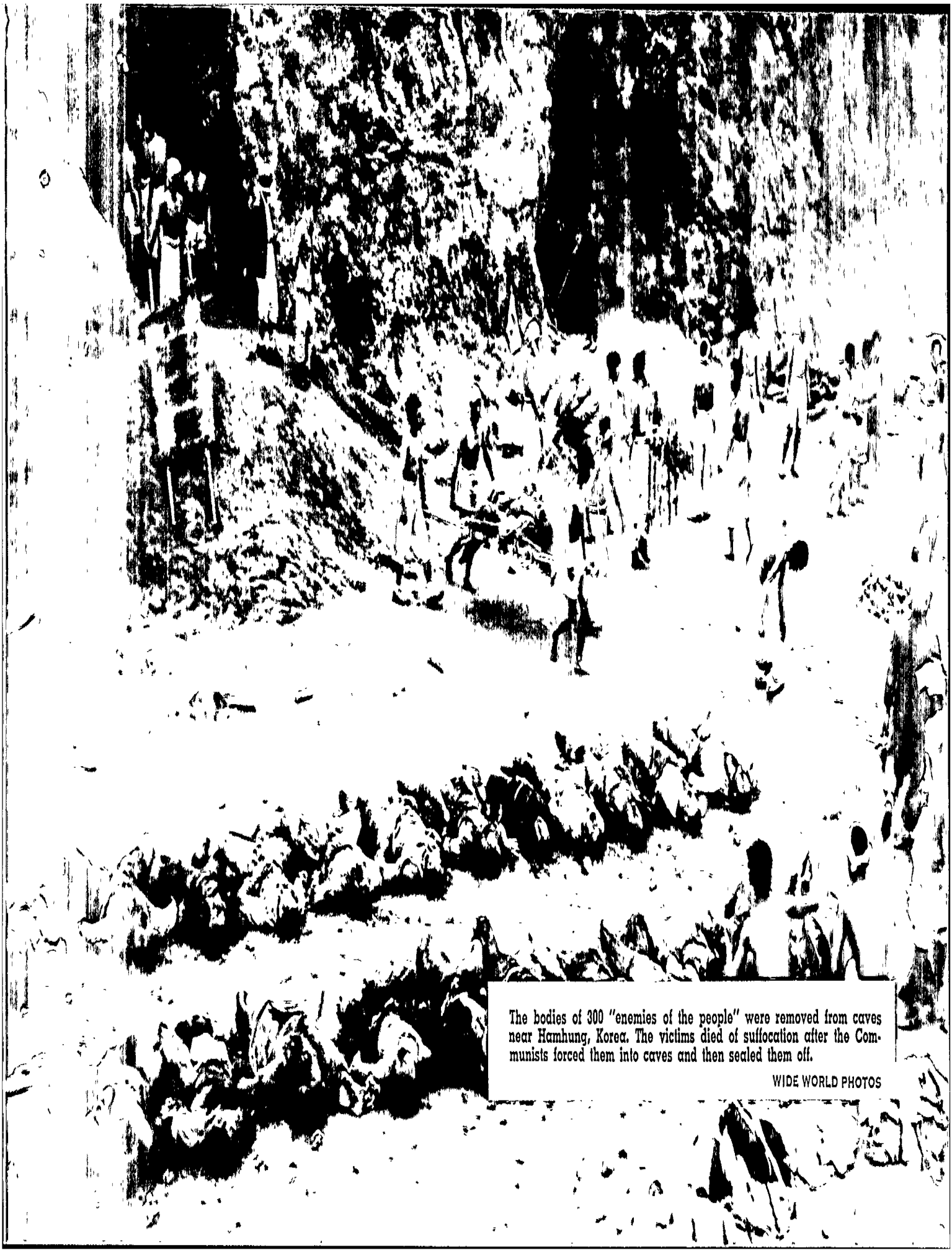
Drunkards are drunkards because of the Capitalist system. Criminals are criminals and prostitutes are prostitutes because of the operation of the profit motive. It is as futile to concentrate upon converting the individual sinner as it is to bail out a torpedoed ocean liner with a tin can. The Capitalist system must be destroyed! And only then will evil disappear from the face of the earth.

The destruction of the Capitalist system must be achieved by a violent *revolution*. It cannot take place as a series of reforms. In THE STATE AND REVOLUTION Lenin writes: "The supercession of the bourgeoisie state by the proletariat state is impossible without a violent revolution."

The aim of the revolution is not to seize control of the state. Within the *democratic* form of government various parties and individuals contend for state power. They wish to control the executive and the legislature, thus being in a position to make laws, and having at their disposal the police force and the army to enforce these laws. This power is exercised in America under the sovereignty of the Constitution. Lenin makes it lucidly clear that the Communist goal is not to seize the power of the state, but to destroy the state in its

entirely. In THE STATE AND REVOLUTION, page 51, he writes, "This course of events compels the Revolution to concentrate all its forces of destruction against the state power and to set itself the aim, not of perfecting the state machine, but of smashing and destroying it." Today it is fashionable for the Communist apologists to interpret the Communist devotion to force and violence as the reluctant defense against their enemies who initiate the attack. Marx, Engels, and Lenin specifically ridiculed this concept. They gloried in the prospect of the use of force. It is an action, not a reaction. They openly glorified violence as the instrument of progress.

Revolution is the core of Communist conquest. To them a reformist (one who believes in the adequacy of reforms alone) is beneath contempt. As the student anticipates the day of graduation; as the bride looks forward to the day of her adorning; as the expectant mother awaits the hour of her deliverance; so, with flashing eyes and leaping pulse the Communist looks forward to that golden hour of the future, the day of Revolution.



The bodies of 300 "enemies of the people" were removed from caves near Hamhung, Korea. The victims died of suffocation after the Communists forced them into caves and then sealed them off.

WIDE WORLD PHOTOS

PART II

SYMPTOMS

Chapter I

THE COMMUNIST PARTY

Communism has proved itself to be a disease of unprecedented virulence. The rapidity of its spread throughout the world has been staggering. A few short years ago any prophet who would have told of the actual situation existing in the world today would have risked incarceration in an institute for the insane.

Communism has repeatedly achieved what every authority proclaimed to be utterly impossible. No barrier of nationality, geography, culture, or religion has been adequate to stop its progress. They have advanced with consummate skill. They have leaped the great wall of China and overwhelmed the inertia of the Chinese personality. The religious barriers of Rome and Islam are yielding before the Communist onslaught. *No barrier yet devised by the human mind has been adequate to prevent this advance.*

THE PARTY

One specific symptom of the Communist disease is the universal existence of the Communist Party. This party is the instrument of despotism in countries under Communist control. It is a thorn in the side of authorities in countries which have not yet succumbed to the Marxian virus. The Party is in large measure the creation of Vladimir Lenin.

In 1903 he split the Russian Social Democratic Labor Party into two sections. The cause of the division appeared to be a minor difference of opinion concerning qualifications for party membership. The Party operated through working groups or organizations. Lenin moved that no one be eligible for membership unless he served in a disciplined capacity in one of the Party organizations. He demanded that membership be closed to all who have not thus proved themselves.

His opponent, Martov, had a large measure of agreement with Lenin but contended that he was too rigid.

The rule should not be universally applied, and exceptions should be made for people of outstanding qualifications. These individuals would be embarrassed by serving in a humble capacity such as street corner agitation, house-to-house visitation, or illicit literature distribution. This group included university professors, government officials, and members of the aristocracy.

When the vote was taken Lenin secured a small majority. The Russian word for majority is akin to Bolshevik, so the followers of Lenin became known as "Bolsheviks." Originally the term "Bolshevik" indicated simply the Party of the majority. With the progress of the years, however, it has been surrounded with a deep emotional content. To the Communists it is a title of the highest honor! To the non-Communists it is a word of horror, associated with slavery, torture, and brutal death.

The structural organization of the Communist Party is the key to its unity and power. The organizational principle is known as Democratic Centralism. This results in a pyramidal form of organization. All authority concentrates in the one individual at the apex of the pyramid. This must inevitably lead to total power being given to one person.

At the base of the pyramid there are the local District or Workshop groups. The next level is the Council for a wider area. This consists of representatives from each of the local groups embraced. The representative from the local group to this higher council is elected by the local group. This is the sum total of the democratic process. This representative cannot be instructed by his local group as to how he is to vote on any matter that may arise. His authority can be restricted in no way.

At the higher Council matters are debated. Prior to the vote being taken, however, the voice of the Communist Party has been heard. The decision reached is binding on every member of that Committee. As a unanimous body they return to their local groups, bringing with them their instructions. These instructions are absolutely binding on every matter at the local level. The returning representative cannot say, "This is the viewpoint of the District Council; personally, I voted against it." He must return absolutely convinced of the wisdom of the decision. He cannot reveal that he opposed it in vote except when giving a self-criticism of his error and expressing penitence.

Finally, at the apex of the pyramid, there is the Central Committee and the executive of that committee. This was previously known as the Politbureau but is now known in Russia as the Praesidium. The real matters of policy are debated in this summit executive. The vote is absolutely binding. They must not merely *obey* in letter, they must *concur* in spirit. This vote constitutes the decision of the Communist Party. It is veritably the voice of their God. They must *think* it is right, humiliate themselves by abject confession if necessary, and wholeheartedly obey the voice of the Party.

It is clear that whoever can obtain a majority in the top committee is absolutely master of the entire Communist machine.

In 1929 in the Politbureau Joseph Stalin had the slender majority of four to three. There was Molotov, Voroshilov, Kalinin, and Stalin against Bukharin, Rykov, and Tomsky. This slender majority was sufficient to assume absolute control of the entire Communist apparatus and put to death the three who voted against him. Strange as it may seem, the recurrent quarrels at the top in the Communist empire are not evidence of division, but of unity. It is not a sign of weakness, but a revelation of strength.

With the creation of the Communist Party, Fascism was born. Hitler and Mussolini were merely pupils of Lenin and Stalin. Their records in brutality and extermination are merely reflections of the basic brutality of the Communist machine. Utilizing his position of

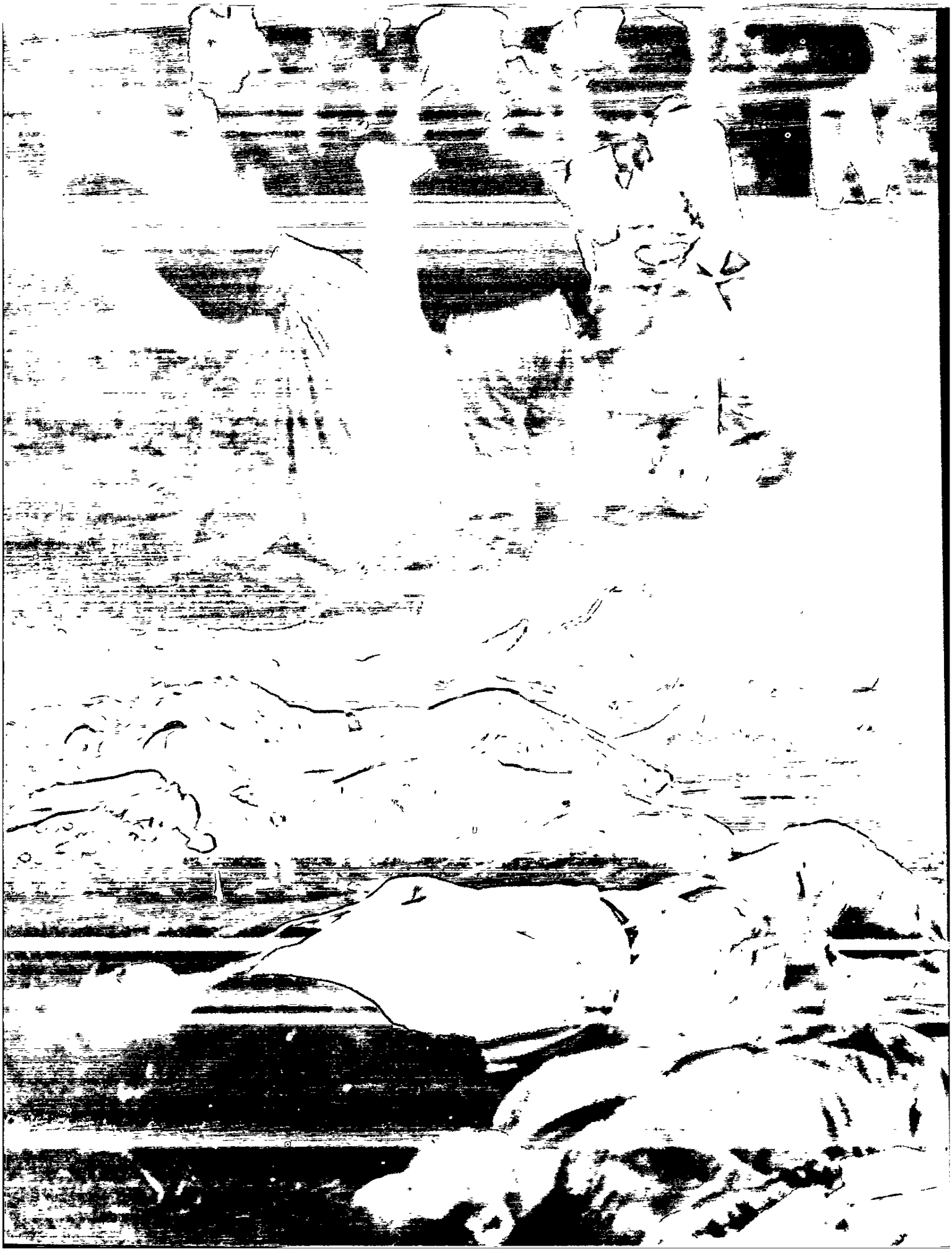
THE RESULTS OF COMMUNIST OPPRESSION.

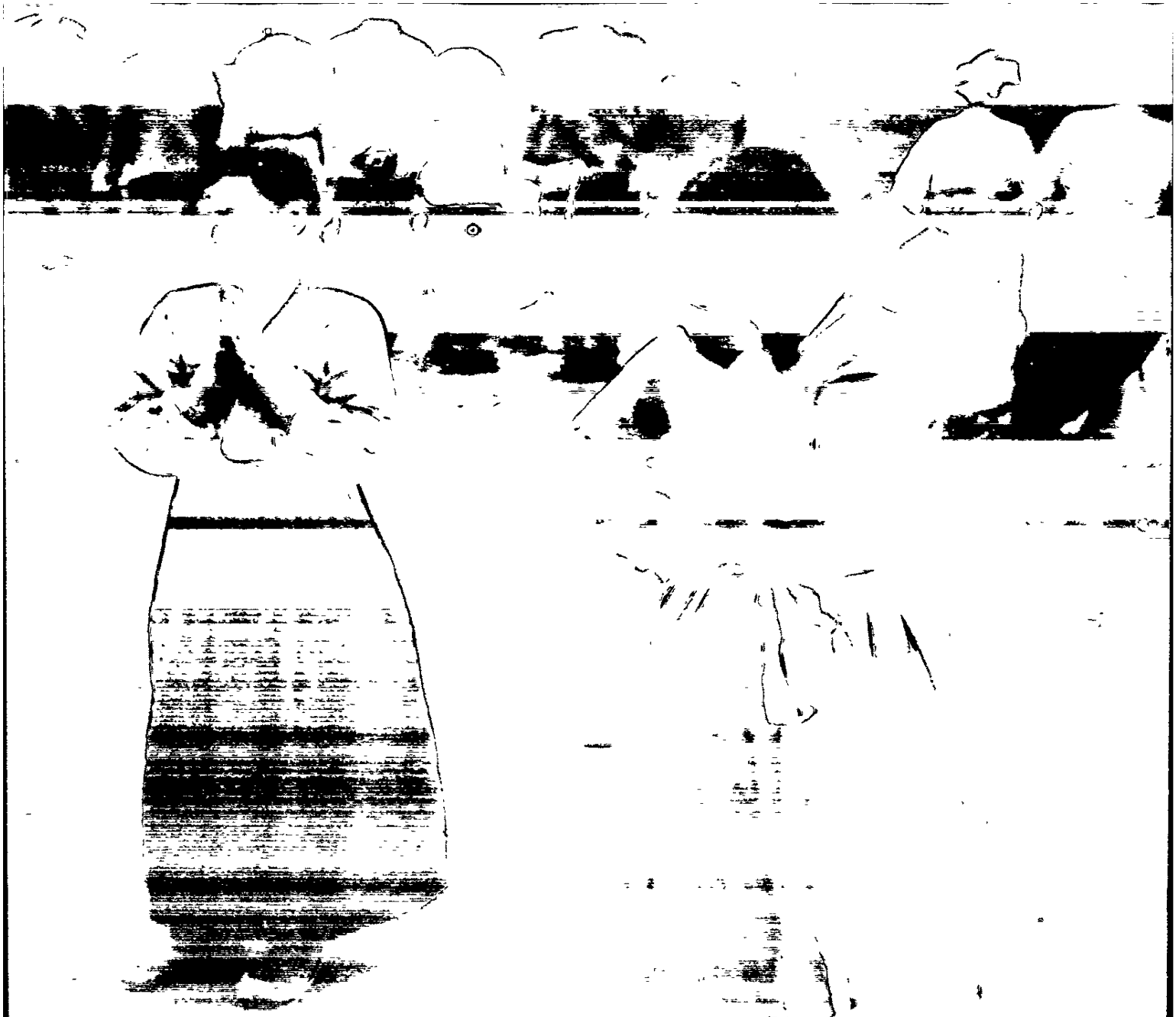
Dr. Reuben Torrey, Presbyterian missionary, and ROK troop amputees.



Dr. Frank C. Phillips, Executive Secretary of World Vision, Inc., with a Korean war orphan.







Korean women weep as they identify bodies of loved ones. The victims were political prisoners killed by suffocation in caves sealed off by the Communists. They belonged to the wrong social class.

WIDE WORLD PHOTOS

power within the Party, Stalin cold-bloodedly exterminated almost the entire original membership. This included six out of seven members of the Politbureau on the death of Lenin.

In 1924 the Politbureau comprised Zinoviev, Kamenev, Bukharin, Rykov, Tomsky, Trotsky, and Stalin. Stalin alone died a natural death. All other members died at the hands of the executioner. Tomsky, the great leader of the Russian Trade Unions, anticipated the executioner's visit by suicide. Trotsky fell victim to the crashing pick-axe wielded in Mexico City. The others received Stalin's personal visiting-card, a bullet adequately positioned at the base of the skull.

In addition to the members of the Politbureau, he exterminated three out of five marshals of the Red Army. He also murdered the overwhelming majority of the members of the Central Committee of the Bolshevik Party which organized the October Revolution of 1917. Stalin went to meet his Maker with hands stained with the blood of millions. During the brutally enforced collectivization of 1929 to 1932, over a million died of starvation in the Ukraine alone. This is not counting the bones that lie in the icy Siberian wastes, bearing testimony to the brutal heart and administrative skill of Joseph Stalin.

To the Communists the Party is a higher form of being, meriting their absolute and uncritical obedience. Their attitude to it is one of worship. The mystical fervor of the Communist to the Party is well illustrated in the speech of Stalin at the bier of Lenin.

"Comrades, we Communists are people of a special mold, we are made of a special stuff. We are those who form the armies of the great international proletarian strategist, Comrade Lenin. It is not given to everyone to be a member of such a party. It is not given to everyone to withstand the stresses and strains that come with membership in such a Party. It is the sons of the working class, the sons of want and struggle, the sons of incredible privation and heroic effort who before all should be members of such a party. That is why the Party of the Leninists, the Party of the Communists, is also called 'The Party of the Working Class.'

"Departing from us, Comrade Lenin adjured us to hold high the 'Member of the Party'—we vow to thee, Comrade Lenin, that we shall fulfil thy behest with credit."

The true Communist utterly identifies himself with the mind, will, and heart of the Communist Party. He loves where it loves, and hates where it hates. In no circumstances would he raise his puny intellect and emotions against the synthesis of the Communist Party. He can say, "I live, yet not I, but the Communist Party lives in me." It is a religious substitute for the life of faith in Christ.

This attitude of the Communist to the Party is revealed by Liu Shao Chi in HOW TO BE A GOOD COMMUNIST. "Whether or not a Communist Party Member can absolutely and unconditionally subordinate his personal interests to the Party's interests under all circum-

stances is the criterion with which to judge his loyalty to the Party, to the Revolution, and to the Communist cause." And again, "If sacrifice has to be made for the Party, countless Communist Party members will face death with equanimity and make any sacrifice without the slightest hesitation." However, it is not enough to die for Communism. The true Communist must feel happy while he dies! It is interesting to ponder and wonder if the Rosenbergs, leaving behind their two orphaned children, were buoyed up within as they took the long last walk to the death-chamber to die for the triumph of world Communism!

This principle of Communist self-abnegation throws light on many inexplicable occurrences in the Communist realm. Consider the puzzling destiny of Lavrenti Beria. Under Joseph Stalin he occupied the position of undisputed power as Head of the dreaded secret police, the N.K.V.D. Many people thought the death of Stalin would see him come to complete power. Six months after the death of Stalin, Beria was arrested, accused of a long list of crimes, made ignominious confession, and was summarily executed. All the authorities rushed in to explain what had taken place. We heard of internal dissension within the Praesidium, of quarrels between the Army and the Secret Police, or between the Party and the Army. The experts attempted to bring reason to the irrational. All explanations leave unanswered one question: "How did they arrest Beria in the first place?"

Who was this man? He was head of the Russian Secret Police, and the Uniformed Police. He was head of the Secret Army that controls the Red Army. He was Administrator of Siberia and Director of their slave-labor empire. He was in charge of the atomic and hydrogen energy projects. Every project under his direction flourished with unprecedented success. He had an informer in every Party and Government meeting. He had phone connections whereby he could listen to the phone conversations of every government and party official. He had a key to the safe of every significant person except Stalin himself. How is it he did not discover the plans being hatched for his downfall?

I suggest the following interpretation. Beria was arrested and executed because he chose to be arrested and executed. He was a Communist. Lenin defined the Communists as "Dead men on furlough." The true Communist lives in the being of the Communist Party and dies with delight at its will. The Communist Party is the historically ordained instrument by which the masses of mankind are to be delivered from bondage.

However, in the place of worship and love for the Communist Party resentment and hatred are developing. This cannot be allowed to continue. The responsibility for the unfortunate lots of the people cannot be laid to the door of the Party. It must be due to some evil enemy agent. It must be somebody well known, in a position of power, upon whom the attention of the people can be focused. With his purging, their resentment can be purged and the Party can advance to new triumphs. A meeting of the Praesidium is held, the problem is discussed, and finally a vote is taken. The vote falls on Beria.

A transformation ensues. The vote of the highest Committee of the Party is the actual creator of truth. Beria now *becomes* guilty of that of which he is accused. The others turn from him with loathing for his perfidy, and shame for the blindness that led them to associate with such an evil character. He goes out, confesses to the designated crimes and incriminates those who should be incriminated. The resentment of the people towards the Party is purged and the Party advances, unblemished, to new triumphs. It is a Satanic, perverted atonement. The individual atones for the Messiah, and not the Messiah for the individual.

No human motivation is uncomplicated, and undoubtedly this interpretation is over-simplified. Nevertheless, it does point up the quality of Communist consecration "to serve without vanity and to the ultimate degree."

In every country in the world this Party is at work. Superbly organized, and internationally controlled, it represents a dagger at the back of all free lands.

Chapter II

BRAINWASHING

A missionary speaks at a Bible conference. He has suffered much for his Lord. After going to China to preach and manifest the love of Christ he was taken captive by the Japanese. For years he endured hideous suffering at their hands. With the defeat of Japan he returned to the American homeland. He was restored to health and once again his great love took him back to China. Once more he was taken captive. This time there was a new quality in his captivity. The Communists did not merely torture him until he confessed he had been a spy. After treatment for three months he was convinced he *had* been a spy. The recollection of his criminal spying acts was so acute and his sense of guilt so severe that, to use his own words, he was "on the very verge of suicide." Never will I forget his tragic look as he said, "Dr. Schwarz, how will we ever get the American people to understand these things?"

A young man sits squat-legged in a padded cell in a veteran's hospital. Young and vibrant with life, he was recruited into the army of his country and sailed across the seas to battle for freedom on the distant soil of Korea. He left behind him the aching hearts of loving and devoted parents. Some years later he returned shattered in body and mind. He underwent the modern process of scientific evil known as brainwashing. He confessed to germ warfare. He has been declared guiltless by the American Army and granted an honorable discharge. This has not been able to disperse the fog of poisonous melancholy that embraces him. His memory is now accurate, and his judgment is clear, but his personality is shattered and he is in love with the cruel mistress "Death." He tries to take his own life. No means has yet been found to lift this cloud from him. He belongs to the legion of the brainwashed.

Brainwashing is a word of mystery and dread. It indicates a planned barbarous scientific assault upon the very foundation of the human mind. In it we see the utter heartlessness and scientific ruthlessness of Communism reach its Satanic fulfillment.

The Communists do not acknowledge the existence of mind. They are materialists and "brain is all." They are not alone in this belief. A Baptist minister was taking a course of post-graduate study at a prominent American university. He mentioned to the professor of psychology something concerning the human soul and received this reply: "For twenty years we have not believed in the existence of the human mind or the human soul." Here is the foundation of brainwashing. It is unlikely that professor was a Communist, but he was laying the foundation.

If the Communists do not believe in the ultimate existence of mind, in what do they believe? They believe in brain structure and function as it is formed by the experiences of life; that is, in what is called the conditioned reflex.

A baby is born with certain skills necessary for survival, but otherwise very helpless. The little one can suck and it can cry. These

activities involve coordination of muscular activity and this coordination is unlearned. These skills are known as natural or unconditioned reflexes. Experience begins to accumulate within the life of the child. At the outset the movements are wild and uncoordinated but gradually they become controlled and skillful. Muscular coordination is achieved. This skill is known as "conditioned reflex." It is manifest in muscular coordination but it is stored within the structure of the brain. The babe learns to sit up, to stand, to walk, to talk, to ride a tricycle, to write. All these skills are conditioned reflexes stored within the brain. From this storehouse of reflexes there emerges personality, character, judgment, and memory as a subjective superstructure. This is Communist doctrine.

The control of personality, judgment, and memory now reduces itself to the study of the building and destruction of conditioned reflexes.

The great Russian scientist who studied these reflexes was Pavlov. His experimental animal was the dog. His experimental reflex was the secretion of saliva. He took dogs and placed a tube in their salivary duct that he might measure accurately the flow of saliva. The dog has a natural reflex. When it is hungry the saliva flows. He showed the dogs food and simultaneously rang a bell. The ringing of the bell became associated with the viewing of the food. He then rang the bell a little before he showed the food. He gradually increased this time interval. Finally the dogs were so conditioned that he merely needed to ring the bell and the saliva would flow.

He then proceeded to build more complex conditioned reflexes and had a kennel of dogs with a specially formed and clearly differentiated reflex pattern.

In 1924, Leningrad, the site of Pavlov's laboratories, experienced a major flood. Pavlov's dogs were trapped. For a week they were without attention. After the rescue, Pavlov, brilliant observer, noted a peculiar thing. A number of the dogs went into a state of deep depression. They suffered physical and emotional collapse. They became sluggish and retarded in their movements. They lost interest in the details of a dog's life. They lay about in a state of dull disinterest. Pavlov made this great discovery. In this state their conditioned reflexes were blotted out. He could then recondition them according to an entirely different pattern.

This provided the key to Pavlov's future activity. He called this condition Cortical Inhibition of the Higher Cerebral Function. He then graduated from the laboratory of dogs to the laboratory of human animals. He developed the techniques whereby the corresponding state could be developed in men and women. He was able to bring about artificial mental and emotional breakdown. The patterns of the past were destroyed. He could reform the mental and emotional fragments in a pattern of his own choosing.

This induced artificial mental and emotional breakdown has the following *characteristics*:

Dr. Homer V. Bradshaw is helped from ambulance at Hong Kong. Dr. and Mrs. Bradshaw, American Missionaries and natives of Pittsburgh, Pa., were arrested by the Communists in 1950.



WIDE WORLD PHOTOS

Retardation of physical functions. The movements become sluggish and infrequent. There is no zest in activity. A minimum amount of activity for the maintenance of life is carried on and no more. The tendency is to sit almost motionless in one position.

Deep melancholy. The outlook is one of sadness and gloom. The bearing is dejected. There is no smile in the eye or on the lips. An aura of sadness surrounds all.

Great sense of guilt. The victim feels guilty of vast and terrible crimes and the mind is tormented with this guilt. This sense of guilt attaches itself to any actions, real or suggested, leading to constant confession and limitless remorse.

Tendency to self-destruction. The only escape from the intolerable burden of remorse and misery seems in death. There is a recurrent desire to commit suicide as the sole means of relief.

The instruments to produce this breakdown are fourfold:

Exhaustion. The individual to be brainwashed is first utterly exhausted. He is deprived of sleep for long periods of time. The entire vitality is lowered by producing a condition of utter physical and mental exhaustion.

Confusion. Concurrently with exhaustion goes confusion. Limitless sessions of questioning are the order of the day. The interrogator sits with a bright light over his shoulder sending its glaring beam directly into the eyes of the one being questioned. The ordeal is endless. A single session may be as long as or even longer than 72 hours. There is no attorney present and no constitutional privilege. Every question must be answered. The questioner is very skillful. He can frame questions so that a simple answer may convey an unconscious admission. There are baited questions of the type "Have you stopped beating your wife?" These may be asked in hundreds of ways. An alert mind sees the trap and avoids it. As exhaustion increases, however, the mental defenses fall and are breached by one of these loaded questions. A simple answer is given involving a hidden admission. This admission is later extracted and the victim is confronted with it. He denies it. He is then confronted with his answer to the question previously given and asked if his answer did not give this admission. He is compelled to admit this is so. He is then asked on which occasion he was lying—in his original answer or later denial. In either case he obviously is a liar and as such all his answers must be suspected. Confusion piles upon confusion. He becomes unsure of himself and his answers. Truth and phantasy become merged and the very foundations of the mind begin to crumple and fall apart.

Chronic Physical Pain. During all this time a state of sub-acute or chronic pain is present. This does not usually involve acute torture. It is not desired to produce a physical breakdown in advance of a mental one. There must be no obvious marks of physical damage when the final brainwashed product is produced. He is left cold without adequate clothing or cover so that the extremities may be frozen. He is left hungry in a state of chronic malnutrition. He is left where

the body can assume no natural or relaxed position; it can neither lie down, sit up or stand erect, but must be twisted to some uncomfortable and unnatural position. Slow, ceaseless, debilitating pain further saps the foundation of the mind.

Emotional Tension or Fear. As scientists the Communists study the individual to discover his emotional weakness and then exploit it. He may be susceptible to threats held over the heads of his loved ones. He may have certain fears of heights or rodents or confined spaces. Constant fear and persistent inner emotional torment is the environment to be produced. There must be no rest or respite for body, mind, or emotions.

The balanced application of these four forces, applied over an adequate period of time, produces the desired result. The mind smashes into fragments. The world of reality dissolves and the broken individual is now ready for the Communist therapist to cleverly reconstruct memory, personality, and character after the desired pattern.

Injection of Communist Ideas. The increased suggestibility of the broken mind is now utilized. The ideas to be believed are suggested, and repeated. Repetition has a tremendous influence on the shattered mind. These suggested ideas are attached to the sense of guilt which is a permanent feature of the confused mental state. The sense of guilt is now attributed to these memories. It will be remembered that the missionary, mentioned at the beginning of this chapter, attributed his sense of guilt to the memory of his terrible spying. In truth the sense of guilt came first. The memories of the spying were suggested later.

The excessive emotional depression and confusion are now removed by psychiatric techniques, while the suggested ideas remain in force. The individual is then produced for whatever Communist purpose is designated. He confesses the crimes he "remembers" committing. He loves his persecutors. He is inordinately grateful to them. He believes his own confession.

There is one bright spot in the whole picture. In the majority of instances the changes brought about by the Communists are not permanent. When the individual is removed from the clutches of the inhuman Communists he recovers his sanity and emotional balance. The scars of his dreadful experience remain with him for ever, but after a recuperative period he can resume his place in a society of free men.

This hideous process is Satan's substitute for the wonderful Christian experience of the washing from sin in the blood of the Lamb of God, and the daily washing from delusion and selfishness in the water of the Living Word.

Mrs. Wilda Bradshaw is helped from ambulance by Red Cross officials. She was released with her husband after nearly five years as prisoner of the Chinese Reds. Mrs. Bradshaw was unable to answer questions. Her husband said, "It'll take a little while to get it through to her that she's out."



WIDE WORLD PHOTOS

Chapter III

FEET SWIFT TO SHED BLOOD

The man was young and carried with him an impression of cleanliness and strength. He had observed an interview on television and had requested an interview. It did not take long to discover he was a typical young American—very proud of his role as husband and father. He was well known and respected in the city. He had been born and raised within its borders.

He said, "I was a captain in the Marines; landed at the Inchon landing in Korea and fought north to the Yalu River. In the fighting there I lost every member of my platoon either by wounds or death. I was twice wounded myself and as a consequence invalided home. Now I am in the Reserves.

"In Korea I saw many terrible sights, but of these one stands out in my memory for the starkness of its horror and the mystery of the madness that accompanied it.

"We went into a town in North Korea from which the Communists were just withdrawing. They had not had time to finalize their preparations. Against a brick wall a row of trenches had been dug and, neatly stacked along those trenches were three hundred bodies. They were all dead. I had seen death often and in many guises. It was not the fact of their death but who they were and the manner of their death that so horrified and mystified me.

"They were old men; men who were too old to serve in the army or labor battalions and march north with the retreating Communists; women, little children, and babies too young to be taken from their mothers to fend for themselves during the northward march.

"This was the manner of their death. The children had been picked up by the feet and swung around so that their heads had been crushed to a bloody pulp against a brick wall. The women had had their breasts cut off and been left to hemorrhage and die in a pool of their own blood. The old men had had their genital organs cut off and been left to hemorrhage. Here and there, apparently as an act of favoritism, one or two of them had had their throats cut.

"I looked on this gruesome sight and through the horror and nausea that overwhelmed me the question insistently came to my mind, Why? Why? Why?

"Why were these people killed? They were quite unable to do harm to anyone. If they were to be killed why was it done in this horrible, bestial, and barbaric manner?

"I've never been able to get an answer to those two questions. I think about them in the daytime. I dream about them in the nighttime. I waken in a cold sweat because of them. Why? Why? Why?"

The answer to these two questions opens a window into the very horror chamber of hell which is Communism. Why were they killed? The answer is in essence very simple. They belonged to the wrong

social class. The class of the future is to be what Communists call the "Proletarian Class." Each other class must be put to death. Age and sex are entirely irrelevant to a scientific project in animal husbandry.

The Communists have a consistent contempt for individual human life. It is a mere superstructure on the reality of the material organization, formed by the economic environment. They dispose of it with a wave of the hand or a wink of the eye. They treat their own with an utter contempt for true value. And they are advancing rapidly with the avowed intention of treating American citizens and the citizens of the free world in this manner.

The evidence of the utter disregard of the Communists for human life is overwhelming. Vladimir Petrov was head of the Russian Secret Police in Australia. He sought sanctuary with the Australian people and brought with him many documents revealing the extent of the espionage that was taking place. Three judges were appointed by the government to investigate the evidence provided by Petrov. After a prolonged and painstaking investigation they reported that all documents produced by Petrov were completely genuine and that Petrov was a truthful and reliable witness.

Petrov relates that during Stalin's great purge of the late 1930's he was a cypher clerk of the secret police. In this purge Stalin deluged the land in blood. It is reported that 2,000,000 were coldbloodedly murdered in this purge and these were all from the higher echelons of power within Russia.

Every town was given its quota of executions. Petrov tells how he would be called upon to decipher such a cable as this: "Execute 10,000 enemies of the people." It would be sent out from the central office of the secret police under its gruesome and blood-stained chief Yezhov. There would be no indication as to whom these enemies of the people were. There would be no statement of the specific crimes of which they were guilty. The responsibility would rest upon the local secret police to determine these details. The important thing was that they fill their quota. On some pretext or other the 10,000 would be found. Every skeleton was dragged from every closet and made an excuse for execution. The social origin of every party member was re-examined. If he originated in a diseased class this was grounds for his destruction.

Trial was summary and execution swift. There were too many to allow the luxury of long trials and legal delay. Most were executed by simple executive order. Petrov relates how one town was behind in its quota. They were visited by the executive assistant of Yezhov himself. He gathered the secret police together and berated them for protecting the enemies of the people. He then announced, "We have enemies in this very room," and turning, he dramatically pointed at certain individuals. They were immediately seized and executed without the slightest pretense of a trial. Such is the Communist contempt for life. Their feet are indeed swift to shed blood, for they have no fear of God before their eyes.

This program of Communism is in no sense due to the barbaric character of the Eastern nations in which Communists first seized power. It is the natural and inescapable consequence of their basic beliefs. The belief is accepted that there is no God, and that men and women are but animals. The belief is accepted that Communists have been selected by a beneficent destiny to conquer the world and "artificially control the evolution of the human species." Thus the extermination of the unfit animals becomes necessary and "moral."

The Communist Party is faced with this problem in America as in other lands. They will be just as cold-blooded and cruel as any Oriental. Ex-Communists who have proved the genuineness of their repentance tell how the leaders of the Communist Party believe it will be necessary to dispose of one-third of the American people after their assumption of power. The inhuman horror of this program staggers the imagination, leaves the tongue speechless, and the mind in paralysis. It is so evil that most people living lives divorced from the inhuman science of Communism, simply cannot understand it. It is the truth. God's Word reveals it, and both logic and history confirm it. They are master-builders building the vastest structure the carnal mind has ever conceived. Their plans are drawn minutely many years in advance. Five, ten, fifteen, twenty years is to them but a day. They know they will be called upon to put to death many millions. It is idle to plan the execution of millions without preparing the means whereby it is to be accomplished. To execute many millions is no mean feat. It can be achieved by bombs or other weapons of mass destruction. These, however, are not selective; they take friend and foe, proletariat and bourgeoisie alike.

If they wish to be in the position where they can destroy a segment of the population, they must have trained executioners. If people are to be willing and consistent executioners they must enjoy administering death or, at the very least, find it not unbearably distasteful. This attitude of mind and heart can be brought about only by the provision of many experiences that will harden them to death so that killing will be a normal function of living.

There is in operation today a program malignant as the pit of hell where it was spawned. The entire junior generation of the Communist world is being scientifically bestialized, that not only will they kill, they will enjoy killing. If necessary they will mutilate and massacre with a dry eye, a slow pulse and a free conscience. Every school child in China is compelled to attend mass executions as a portion of their education. The first time the little kindergarten tots see these brutal killings they are apt to vomit or faint. It is a terrible ordeal. The second time it is not quite so bad. After about five times it is routine. Later it even becomes interesting. Here we see cold-blooded inhuman science plunge to its supreme infamy.

One evening I was the preacher at a well-known church in the Northwest. I told them the grim truth of what was being done to Chinese children. At the conclusion of the service a lady came to me and introduced herself; she had a fragrant Christian personality.



To the Communist, killing is a normal function of living.

She said, "Dr. Schwarz, I was so glad to hear you say what you did tonight. My husband and I saw those very things happening with our own eyes. We were missionaries in China and spent two years under the Communists near the Burmese border. The imprint of those terrible days will never leave us. When we came out we tried to tell people what was happening. They did not want to know. It disturbed their peace of mind too much. If we were invited to speak once, after hearing what we had to say, they did not invite us back. Many people prefer not to know the truth when it does violence to the complacent and self-indulgent pattern of their daily life."

The experiences of this fine missionary couple were not only profoundly disturbing but also very revealing. They illustrate the nature of the program of this terrible and Godless foe. When the Communists first came to the town they were the epitome of friendliness and charm. No one could have been more delightful. Step by step their program of enslavement and transformation went into operation. While happiness was the order of the day they selected all potential leaders of the future resistance and on some pretext or other they were executed. They then utterly disarmed the people. Every weapon, large or small, had to be surrendered. They gave great rewards to anyone who could tell where a weapon was hidden. They set everyone spying on everyone else. This applied with particular significance to the children.

They stopped freedom of movement and a system of internal passports was instituted. They stopped freedom of association. Any gathering not under Communist direction became automatically suspected. These missionaries were asked by their own church members to stay away from all church services. The presence of the missionaries placed the lives of the worshippers in jeopardy. They were liable to arrest for consorting with spies.

The assault on the child mind began in earnest. The children were filled with pride. They were directed in their affections towards the state and away from their parents. They were encouraged to spy on their parents and one another and even to relate "wrong" thoughts in their own minds.

One day under the guns of the soldiers the grade school children were marched out. The business center of the town was cordoned off. The children were sent into the shops to search them for weapons and currency. They stopped every adult on the street and the children searched them down to their most intimate garments.

The mass arrests and executions began. Those missionaries would receive an order not to go out of their house the following day. At 10:00 a.m. the bands would start down the streets. Behind the bands a group of prisoners would march with their hands cruelly bound behind their backs. Into the hands a stock would be thrust with a placard at the top telling the crimes of which they were allegedly guilty. Behind the prisoners the school children would march and the mothers were compelled to take their babies in arms to witness the

mass execution of these prisoners. To turn the face away at the most brutal moment was a criminal act.

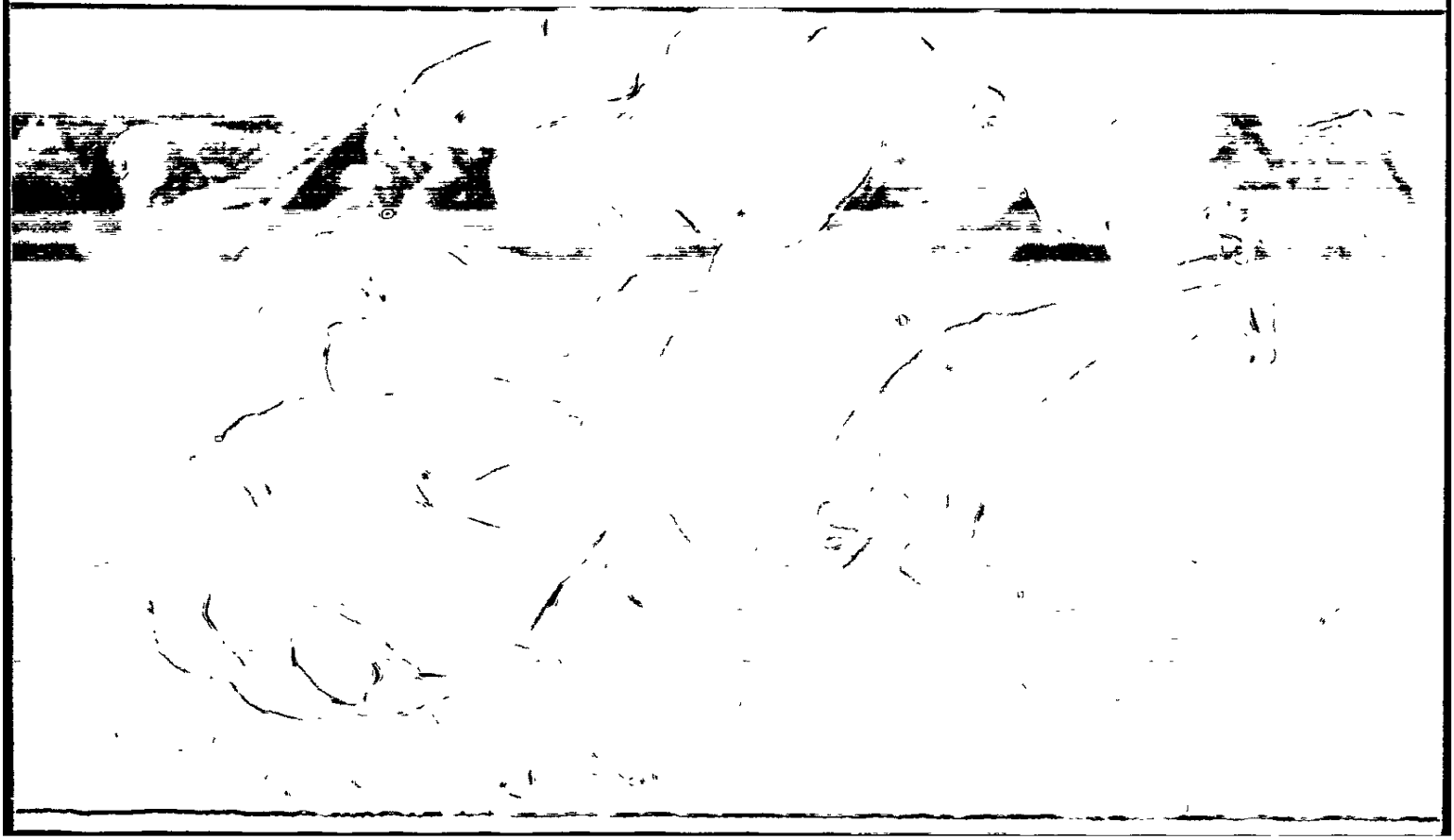
The Christian mothers naturally hated this necessity of thus degenerating their own children. They tried to hide them. If they hid them and were caught they were arrested for counter-revolutionary activity.

There is nothing more hideous in Communism than their deliberate brutalizing of the children. We again think of the words of our Lord, "But whoso shall offend one of these little ones which believe in Me, it were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and that he were drowned in the depth of the sea."



Massacred Koreans line burial trenches . . . the starkness of its horror and the mystery of its madness . . .

There is nothing more hideous in Communism than their deliberate brutalizing of the children.



PART III

PROGNOSIS

Chapter I

THE FORECAST OF COMMUNISM

The term prognosis is not in such general usage as the term diagnosis. The prognosis of a disease refers to its future rather than its present. Treatment must be related not merely to the severity of the existing symptoms but also to the probable future development. Inherent within the disease there is a law of development. An understanding of this law coupled with the records of past sufferers enables an intelligent prediction of the future. The symptoms of the moment may be minor and insignificant, and yet there may be within the being of the disease a future development of unlimited tragedy. Treatment depends very largely upon this future expectation. This principle is now generally acknowledged in our daily life.

How serious is the danger that Communism presents to the health, liberty, and life of free men and women throughout the world? Upon the answer to this question depends the severity of the treatment. This question must be answered by fact, not fancy, by knowledge and not intuition. The facts of Communist progress are staggering.

In 1903 Lenin established Bolshevism with about 17 supporters. In 1917 Lenin conquered Russia with about 40,000 supporters. In 1955 the party of Lenin was in iron control of 900,000,000. If God would but burn the significance of these figures into our hearts! The number of their conquests is too vast to be comprehended. A few comparisons may give some indication of the gravity of the situation. Adolph Hitler bathed the world in carnage and blood and he began with 75,000,000. Japan likewise set out on her Asian conquest with 75,-000,000. The Communists today have 900,000,000—twelve times the number Hitler and Japan had.

One final comparison should challenge every Christian heart. Nearly 2,000 years ago God manifested the fulness of His love in the person of His only begotten Son, the Lord Jesus Christ, born of the Virgin Mary. Our Lord lived a blameless life and died an atoning death. Crucified, dead and buried, He rose from the dead and gave to His Church the great commission, "Go ye into all the world, and preach the Gospel."—Mark 16:15. In obedience, the Church of our Lord has pressed forward. They ceased neither by day nor night to preach the Gospel. The early Christians faced the ravening mouths of the devouring lions. They endured the flames as they tormented their flesh and wafted their spirits into the presence of their Lord. Today nearly 2,000 years later only one-third of the people of the world have heard in some fragmentary measure the story of the love of Christ.

The Communists have conquered more than that since 1917! If this does not challenge the Christian heart, it is stony indeed. The natural impulse is to cry out, "It's not true. It cannot be true." When sober analysis convinces of its complete truthfulness the question arises, "What can we yet do, even at this late hour, to fulfill the command of our Lord?"

The Communists openly proclaim that they propose to conquer the world. They have made tremendous strides towards the consummation of this goal. To simply close our eyes and say, "It can't happen, it isn't possible," is the comfortable refuge of wishful delusion. It is not the pathway of our Lord, Who said to the people in His day, "You hypocrites, you can discern the face of the sky but can you not discern the signs of the times?"

The prognosis of Communism is desperate, and only an honest acknowledgment of this provides a hopeful basis for successful treatment.



Pastor Han shows the lonely air raid shelter where he escaped execution.

Bob Pierce and Chaplain Harold Voelkel with heroic North Korean Pastor Im, who played a leading part in the work with the Communist POW's. Pastor Im was held prisoner.by the Reds for two years, and later by the U.N. forces as a North Korean fugitive.



Chapter II

THE CURE FOR COMMUNISM

The challenge is immediately made: "You have given a clear diagnosis with a chilling prognosis. What do you now prescribe as the treatment to hold this malady in check? What prospect is there that it may be defeated?"

Fundamentally this battle is a great conflict between God and Godlessness; between matter and spirit; between Christ and Satan; between heaven and hell. "For the weapons of our warfare are not carnal, but [spiritual and] mighty through God to the pulling down of strongholds."—II Corinthians 10:4.

In this titanic struggle we may pause and weigh the opposing forces. We are heavily outnumbered. They have the raw material of 900,000,000 human souls. They are at this moment fashioning them for their purpose. Their leadership is highly intelligent and following a very clever program to bring them steadily and surely to total world power. Their personnel is courageous, dedicated, and obedient. What hope have we?

Our hope rests in our great unconquerable asset; the power of our living and Almighty God. He has not abdicated from the throne of the universe, and one day ". . . The kingdoms of this world [shall] become the kingdoms of our Lord, and of His Christ. . . ."—Revelation 11:15.

God has chosen to limit Himself to act through human instruments. The power of God is released through the lives of God honoring, God-inspired, and God-directed men and women.

The Communists confidently affirm the certainty of their victory because of the quality of character prevailing in allegedly Christian countries. They believe that personality and ideas are the product of the prevailing economic environment. Our environment is capitalism in its dying phase. It has created a type of character without survival value. The typical Christian is so self-indulgent, so avaricious, so entertainment intoxicated, so intellectually lazy, so limited in his horizons of interest that we will never have the requisite understanding or dedication for survival.

Pause for thought is appropriate. Are our lives arguments for or against the accuracy of this Communist thesis. Our Lord says, "Ye are the salt of the earth: but if the salt have lost its savor, wherewith shall it be salted? It is henceforth good for nothing, but to be cast out and trodden under foot of men."—Matthew 5:13.

Has the Christian life lost its savor? Is our professed Christianity a drug soothing us to sleep? Again and again I hear the cry "We have no need to worry; God loves us. He won't let anything too bad happen to us."

Although this is true in the absolute sense, it is not true in the sense in which it is applied so often. God loves the Koreans, but the

scene described earlier of mutilated bodies certainly took place. Many of the victims were Christians. God's love guarantees us strength in tribulation and eternal life. It never guarantees absence of suffering and toil.

Shall I be carried to the skies
On flowery beds of ease,
While others fought to win the prize
And sailed through bloody seas?

Our faith in God should never be a sedative to slumber. It must be a stimulus to prayer and selfless courageous service.

Once Christians are awakened to the danger and their responsibility there are many things they can do. We will consider but a few.

Practical Help. In the words of our Lord in Matthew 25:31-46, we have the judgment of the nations.

> When the Son of Man shall come in His glory, and all the holy angels with Him, then shall He sit upon the throne of His glory:
>
> And before Him shall be gathered all nations: and He shall separate them one from another, as a shepherd divideth his sheep from the goats:
>
> And He shall set the sheep on His right hand, but the goats on the left.
>
> Then shall the King say unto them on His right hand, Come ye blessed of my Father, inherit the Kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world:
>
> For I was an hungered, and ye gave Me meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave Me drink: I was a stranger, and ye took Me in:
>
> Naked, and ye clothed Me: I was sick, and ye visited Me: I was in prison, and ye came unto Me.
>
> Then shall the righteous answer Him, saying, Lord, when saw we Thee an hungered, and fed Thee: or thirsty, and gave Thee drink?
>
> When saw we Thee a stranger, and took Thee in? Or naked, and clothed Thee?
>
> Or when saw we Thee sick, or in prison, and came unto Thee?
>
> And the King shall answer and say unto them, Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye have done it unto one of the least of these my brethren, ye have done it unto Me.
>
> Then shall He say also unto them on the left hand, Depart from Me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels:

> For I was an hungered, and ye gave Me no meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave Me no drink:
>
> I was a stranger, and ye took Me not in: naked, and ye clothed Me not: sick, and in prison, and ye visited Me not.
>
> Then shall they also answer Him, saying, Lord, when saw we Thee an hungered, or athirst, or a stranger, or naked, or sick, or in prison, and did not minister unto Thee?
>
> Then shall He answer them, saying, Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye did it not to one of the lease of these, ye did it not to Me.
>
> And these shall go away into everlasting punishment: but the righteous into life eternal.

Our Lord uses here as the test of fitness to inherit the kingdom, whether or not we have fed the hungry, given drink to the thirsty, and clothed the naked.

The world is filled with the hungry, the thirsty, and the naked. From the streets of Korea to the streets of India they cry out for bread. The Communists use this hunger to recruit them to the army of the Godless. We must help in a practical way.

How many of us are in love with this world; its automobiles, its central heating, air-conditioning, and its wide-screen television? These things we *must* have, while the night winds are hideous with the cries of the hungry.

The Communists give, and give, and give again. They realize they do not belong to themselves. Their money is entrusted to them for a cause. Their hours belong to their Godless master. No sacrifice of money, reputation, comfort, or health is too much. They do not tithe. Many give at least one-half of their income to the Communist Party. Can we not do as much for our Lord. We must sacrifice and give until it hurts. This is the test of our love for our Lord.

Literature. We are confronted with a strange paradox. We claim to be a spiritual civilization. We believe in the spirit of man and the power of the human mind. Ideas are creative and the great ideas of men have formed a dominant role in the history of mankind. On the other hand the Communists are arrogant and naked materialists; they proclaim that matter in motion is the sum total of all being. They despise spirit and in the last analysis reject the very existence of mind itself as shown in their brainwashing. And yet the Communists are conquering the world with ideas while the free world tries to combat them by material means.

After a service one evening a man introduced himself to me as a retired medical missionary from China. He had given the best years of his life in loyal and selfless service to the bodies and souls of the Chinese people. The Communists had come and conquered and he had been expelled. He said "In 1926, in one day I saw 3000 pounds of literature go through the mails of our province to the high school students." That's when they conquered China, when they conquered the student mind. They merely mopped it up in 1949.

Dr. Bob Pierce preaches in a Communist POW camp . . . a great conflict between God and Godlessness.



The Communists are deluging the world with books and directing them primarily to the minds of the young. They are superbly printed on excellent material, and the price is but a fragment of their value. Wherever there is the young student in Asia, eager for learning, there are Communist books.

These books are beautiful and unbelievably seductive. They are adapted to the moral concepts and cultural background of those they are intended to win. They present Communist countries as lands of loveliness and liberty, where everyone is happy in an environment of peace, prosperity and tender humanity. They present America and the free world as the lands of decadence, exploitation, immorality, and misery.

Where the Christian missionary teaches to read, the Communist comes and provides the literature to be read. "Be not deceived: evil communications corrupt good manners."—I Cor. 15:33.

One priority desperately urgent is that books of Christendom and democracy, be made available to the students of Asia, Africa, and South America: good books, clean books, well-printed books, books that tell the truth about God and His love, and about the Redemption of the Christ of Calvary. If the present conquest of the Asian student mind continues unabated, all the atom and hydrogen bombs in the arsenals of the world will be obsolete and meaningless to halt the Communist advance.

The cry is raised, "But what can we do? We are so limited in our resources. This is a matter for government action." "It is better to light one candle than to curse the darkness." We must do the little we can at once and not postpone it awaiting the great things the government may or may not do. God can take our little and multiply it a million fold to feed the multitudes. Our small projects may become the example and inspiration for great ones. The important thing is to act, and the time is now.

Prayer. "Men ought always to pray and not to faint." Nevertheless, it is so much easier to talk about praying than to pray. We need to pray fervently; to pray persistently; to pray with triumphant faith; to agonize in prayer. Once the vision is seen of the vastness of the danger to our homes, our loved ones, our children, and our very lives, it should drive us to our knees.

"Therefore, also now, saith the Lord, turn ye even to Me with all your heart, and with fasting, and with weeping, and with mourning: And rend your heart, and not your garments, and turn unto the Lord your God. . . ."—Joel 2:12.

Dedication. "Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except a corn of wheat fall into the ground and die, it abideth alone: but if it die it bringeth forth much fruit. He that loveth his life shall lose it."—John 12:24-5.

Lenin defined the Communists as "Dead men on furlough." They were dead to self and alive to the Communist Party. The Apostle Paul could say, "For we which live are always delivered unto death for Jesus' sake, that the life also of Jesus might be made manifest in our mortal flesh." "I am crucified with Christ."



Dr. Bob Pierce, president of World Vision, Inc., receives a medal for his work in the Communist POW camps.

Chaplain Harold Voelkel, and Bob Pierce give individual spiritual counsel to a Communist POW.



Can we die to self and live in Christ. "Nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in me: and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave Himself for me."—Gal. 2:20.

The Christ-revealing life is the light of the world.

The Christians must act first and not wait for the politicians, the legislators, and the government. They are the inheritors of the power of God to turn back the Godless. If they fulfil their preservative function as salt the whole body of the free world may be preserved. To do the task near at hand will ultimately lead to the distant projects being undertaken by many others.

Victory. Arthur Koestler in his book THE AGE OF LONGING through one of his characters expresses the conviction that the defeat of the Christian world is certain because of the loss of faith in the immortality of the soul. With no faith in an after-life all attention is concentrated upon securing the maximum pleasure in this present one.

To any who lack this saving faith there is a place where it may be gained—in humble penitence at the foot of Calvary's Cross. There God bestows the gift of faith which gives everlasting life. We hear the promise, "I am the resurrection, and the life: he that believeth on me, though he were dead, yet shall he live: and whosoever liveth and believeth in me shall never die."—John 11:25-26.

True faith in Christ is certain victory.

The Communist Interpretation of Peace



by

Dr. Fred Schwarz

THE

COMMUNIST INTERPRETATION

OF

PEACE

CHRISTIAN ANTI-COMMUNISM CRUSADE
Houston Office
P. O. Box 6422, Phone JA 6-1545
Houston 6, Texas

A Companion Booklet to

The Heart, Mind and Soul of Communism

and

The Christian Answer to Communism

by

DR. FRED SCHWARZ



DR. FRED SCHWARZ
Physician, Surgeon, World Traveler
of Sydney, Australia

Subjects on which he speaks include the following:

1. "The Heart, Mind, and Soul of Communism."
2. "The Communist Blueprint for the Conquest of the United States."
3. "The Communist Liquidation Lists, How They Are Prepared and Who is on Them."
4. "Techniques of Communist Brainwashing."
5. "Who are the Real Rulers of Russia?"
6. "The Significance of the Death of the Rosenbergs."
7. "Why Millionaires, Ministers of Religion, and University Professors Become Communists."
8. "The Imminent Peril in the East—Will Japan Go Communist?"
9. "The Communist Program in Education and Religion."
10. "Communism and Cancer—A Surgeon's Dilemma."
11. "Will Communism Collapse from Within?"
12. "Why Has Communism Attacked the Jews?"

Dr. Schwarz, finding a rich field of illustrative material in the realm of medical experience, draws upon the daily life of a practicing physician and surgeon to illustrate and clarify the issues confronting this country in the conflict with the malignant social disease of Communism. He is available for engagements and can be contacted through Dr. W. E. Pietsch, Box 890, Long Beach 1, Calif. or Great Commission Schools, Box 727, Anderson, Indiana.

INTRODUCING THE AUTHOR

Dr. Fred C. Schwarz was born in Brisbane, Queensland, Australia, January 15, 1913. He was educated at the Brisbane Grammar School and later at the University of Queensland, where he graduated in Science. He became a school teacher and completed his degree in Arts while teaching and then became lecturer to the Queensland Teacher's College in Mathematics and Science. Subsequently, while continuing his lecturing, he completed the Medical Course at the Queensland University, graduating in Medicine and Surgery. He entered medical practice in Sydney, where he is now engaged in general practice, though part of his time was formerly given to work in Psychiatry.

Dr. Schwarz has been a Christian lay preacher for many years and his attention was first directed to Communism while at the University of Queensland where he debated a member of the Central Committee of the Communist Party of Australia. Later he began a special study of the basic Communist texts in an effort to explore not only the deeds, but also the thought-life of World Communism. He has become widely known as one of the most informed non-Communists in the world on the basic Communist texts and has had an open challenge to debate any Communist on any platform in any part of the world. A number of debates have resulted with a consequent sharpening of his appreciation of the character, mind, and technique of leading Anglo-Saxon Communists. Being invited to speak at many gatherings, he has devoted more and more time to an exposition of the tremendous danger in which the entire civilized world lies at the moment, from the incredibly rapid progress of this malignant force. He is now on his second world tour in two years, speaking before numerous civic and church groups, endeavoring always to present in simple language just what Communism is, believing that understanding is the irreducible minimum for intelligent counter-action. He comes to this country from very recent tours in Japan, the Philippines, Australia, New Zealand. and the British Isles, and has a fascinating yet terrifying story to tell.



FRANK W. BOYKIN

In a recent trip to Washington arranged by Rev. Billy Graham, Dr. Schwarz addressed Congressmen, Senators, and Cabinet Staff Officers at the Congressional Dining Room in Washington, D. C. Congressman Frank W. Boykin telegramed Graham as follows:

FRANK W. BOYKIN
1st District, Alabama

Home Address:
MOBILE, ALABAMA

ALPHONSE LUCAS
SECRETARY

COMMITTEE
MERCHANT MARINE
AND FISHERIES

Congress of the United States
House of Representatives
Washington, D. C.

FEBRUARY 26, 1953

DR. BILLY GRAHAM
MONTREAT, NORTH CAROLINA

THANKS TO YOU AGAIN FOR BRINGING US ANOTHER GREAT MESSAGE THROUGH YOUR FRIEND, DR. FRED SCHWARZ. IT WAS TERRIFIC. HE KNOCKED THEM COLD. WE HAD PRACTICALLY ALL THE LEADERS IN THE REPUBLICAN AND DEMOCRATIC PARTY. I HAD THE MESSAGE RECORDED AND EXPECT TO PLAY IT FOR PRESIDENT EISENHOWER. ALSO PLAY IT IN MOBILE AND OTHER PLACES. I AM ALSO GOING TO GET THE MESSAGE FROM THE TAPE AND PUT THE ENTIRE STORY IN THE CONGRESSIONAL RECORD AND MAKE MANY THOUSANDS OF COPIES. YOU WERE MENTIONED MANY TIMES BY DR. SCHWARZ AND ME. LOOKING FORWARD TO SEEING YOU IN JACKSONVILLE ABOUT THE TENTH. LOVE TO YOU AND YOURS.

FRANK W. BOYKIN, M. C.

OFFICIAL DAY LETTER

FRANK W. BOYKIN
1st Dist., Alabama

Home Address:
MOBILE, ALABAMA

ALPHONSE LUCAS
SECRETARY

COMMITTEE:
MERCHANT MARINE
AND FISHERIES

COUNTIES:
CHOCTAW
CLARKE
MARENGO
MOBILE
MONROE
WASHINGTON
WILCOX

Congress of the United States
House of Representatives
Washington, D. C.

FOREWORD

Our beloved country is in mortal peril. All previous dangers that have confronted us pale into insignificance before the deadly menace of world Communism. The simple mathematics of the situation are staggering. Even the most blithely optimistic must be sobered at the realization that at this moment more than 800 million persons are under Communistic control and are being prepared by the most modern scientific techniques to conquer and destroy our country.

To be forewarned is to be forearmed. Our greatest mistakes have derived from a failure to understand the mind, the motivation and the method inherent in Communism itself. When we merely observe the action of the Communists and presume that they are people like unto ourselves and ascribe to them motivation that we would have in such circumstances we plunge into error. It is a task of tremendous urgency to enlighten the American mind as to the fundamental nature of Communism and its inner psychology.

It was my privilege to sponsor Dr. Fred Schwarz at a dinner attended by leaders from both Houses of Congress and Representatives of the State Department at which he delivered the address contained in this book. The impression made upon everyone present was tremendous. He has studied the fundamental Communist Texts over a period of many years and has an understanding of the inner workings of Communism possessed by very few.

In addition he has the ability and eloquence to present these ideas in a gripping and understandable manner. His message is a tremendous contribution to the entire free world in the fight against Communism. He does not hesitate to call upon God Who is a present help in time of trouble.

As one in the thick of the conflict against Communism, I unhesitatingly recommend this book, its author and its message to the American people.

Frank W. Boykin

FRANK W. BOYKIN, M. C.

The Communist Interpretation of Peace

Speech Delivered by Dr. Fred Schwarz in Congressional Dining Hall, February 27, 1953

I would like to express, first of all, my warm appreciation to Congressman Boykin, who most generously has provided this opportunity for me to speak to you, after my introduction to him by Evangelist Billy Graham. I am deeply appreciative of his hospitality, generosity, and warm-heartedness. I say a very sincere thank you.

I would like also to express my appreciation to Billy Graham who paid my return fare from the West Coast because he wanted me to get this opportunity to speak to you gentlemen.

I would also like to say how much I appreciate the fact that you people, with your busy lives, have paid me the honor of coming to hear this address.

I am by profession a physician and surgeon of Sydney, Australia. I have in Sydney the remains of what was once a very good medical practice, but during the last three years I have not been there very much. People say to me, "What is this? A kind of extended vacation?" To these I reply, "I am concerned with the diagnosis, the prognosis and the prevention of a malignant disease; a disease of an epidemic ferocity and malignant terror, the like of which the world has never seen; a disease that will probably kill more Americans in the next ten years than cancer, tuberculosis and heart disease combined."

Communism—A Malignant Disease

I refer to the malignant disease of civilization known as Communism. When the medical profession is confronted with a disease, there are two essential prerequisites to adequate treatment. Before commencing treatment it is necessary to understand it, to diagnose it adequately, to know the laws of its development and the condi-

tions that favor its growth. Understanding is an essential prerequisite of intelligent treatment.

The second question that the medical man needs to answer is what is known as the prognosis of the disease. In other words, what is its future course and how severe will it be? What will be its probable outcome? Because, upon the expectation of the severity of the outcome, depends the radical nature of the treatment that is necessary. Before I go into the diagnosis of this disease called Communism, I would simply like to consider the problem—How serious can we expect the future development of Communism to be?

Prognosis

I categorically affirm that the prognosis is so extremely serious that it renders meaningless 90% of the things that we plan for and arrange from day to day. The prognosis is so terrifying that the most pessimistic of us is fundamentally an optimist. The cold statistics should send a shudder through every intelligent person.

In 1917 the founder of Bolshevism, Lenin, was an exile in Geneva, Switzerland. He had less than 40 thousand fanatical followers scattered throughout Russia and the world.

As I speak to you, the party of Lenin is in iron control of over 800 million. It has grown from 40 thousand to 800 million in thirty-five years. This is an increase of two million percent.

Every Communist is utterly convinced that Communism has won the world. As far as they are concerned, it is simply a matter of how long it will take them to perform the mopping up operations. It is a fundamental concept in the Communist mind that the world is now their property. I could give you hundreds of Communist authorities on that, but let us just take this one. He is an alleged American known as William Z. Foster. Here is his book, "Twilight of World Capitalism." The most interesting thing in it is the dedication, "To my great-grandson Joseph Manley Kolko, who will live in a Communist United States."

The entire Communist world and a good half of the remaining world are convinced that they have won. To sustain this contention they can point to the objective fact that they have grown from 40

thousand to 800 million in 35 years, increasing by 2 million percent. These figures are even more alarming when we consider that in the last war Germany had less than 80 million and Japan had less than 80 million, while the Communists today have 800 million; and in addition, against Germany and Japan during the last war were arrayed the British Empire, Russia and China; while today Russia and China are our definite enemies, and the number of allies upon whom this country could depend are very few. If these simple facts do not frighten us, we have strong nerves indeed.

It is interesting to consider what is happening to those 800 million. There is in operation today a campaign of scientific intensity and intelligent efficiency to convert the entire younger generation into a unified fanatical mass, living for one purpose and one purpose only and that is to sacrifice their lives to destroy what they consider to be the most evil and vile thing on the earth, namely, your country of America.

I have here in my hand a little booklet published in Los Angeles and sold openly to Americans in the streets of this country. It is put out in documentary form and is called, "Report on War Crimes in Korea," published by the "Commission of International Association of Democratic Lawyers." I will just read from it an alleged objective report.

"Mass Massacres"

"According to the evidence of Pyong Won Goon, the Chairman of the People's Committee, 35,383 civilians (19,149 men and 16,234 women) were murdered in the district of Sinchon during the American occupation, which lasted from October 17 till December 7, 1950, that is, for less than two months. The number includes a substantial number of refugees who were in the district. On the evidence examined, the following facts can be established beyond doubt:

On October 18, 1950, in the city of Sinchon, behind the building of the People's Committee, a mass murder of about 900 men and women, including about 300 children, was committed. Some of the women were pregnant.

The murder was committed by order of the Commander of the American Occupying Forces in the city—Harrison (described by one witness as Halison). Harrison was present when his order was fulfilled and took photographs of the execution.

The murder was committed as follows: All the people were pushed into an open deep grave. Harrison ordered them to take off their clothes, then ordered fuel-oil to be thrown over the victims who were set on fire. Those who tried to get out of the grave were shot.

A witness declared: 'The cries and shrieks of these people were heart-breaking. Those who were not burned to death were buried alive. Harrison came the next day and took photos'.''

To buy this book I did not have to put on a mask, I did not have to go to a back door, I did not have to give a password. It is sold openly at the Communist Book Store in Los Angeles, called the Progressive Book Store, 1806 W. 7th Street and in it there is an appeal for funds to help in its distribution.

Can you imagine the effect of reitterated stories of this nature in the primary schools, in the educational mechanism of 800 million people who believe it utterly?

Let me read you another sample to show you what they are saying in this country. You can imagine what they are saying in other countries, if they say this here. Here is another ''Massacre'':

''On the very day the American troops entered the locality Wvol San Ri of the Cho Ri region, Sinchen Myen—they committed a particularly horrible murder against the Woo Mal Che family. The Americans pierced a wire through the hands, ears and nose of the witness' husband. On his forehead they fastened, with a nail, a diploma for work found in the room and tortured him until he died. Eleven children of the family of Woo Mal Che, of from 5 to 25 years of age, were shot on the spot. Woo Mal Che's daughter-in-law, seeing the American soldiers torturing her father-in-law, tried to defend him. The Americans attached her by her hair to a tree, cut off her breasts, put a wooden club in her vagina, poured fuel oil on it, and set fire to it. They then poured oil over her and burned her alive.

About 20 American soldiers took part in this murder.''

''In the locality Mi Gok Ri of the Jong Chang Myen region on Dec. 5, 1950, Bak Yong Nye, aged 23, was raped by three American soldiers. In the same locality and on the same date another woman 38 years old was raped by four American soldiers.''

Yes, there are 800 million people who believe it as the absolute truth.

Scientific Conditioning

We are faced with the unpalatable truth that there are nearly six people for every one in the United States today who are being scientifically conditioned, so that they will be as fanatical as any Japanese Kamikaze pilot ever was, with one single aim—to destroy this country. The prognosis is desperately serious.

Diagnosis

Let us turn to the diagnosis. How did this come to pass? Who are these people, the Communists? What sort of people are they? What do they believe? What do they think? What ideas do they have in their minds?

My considered opinion is that our greatest weakness and the tragedy of our dealings with the Communists, is that we have failed to take full cognizance of their thought channels and their basic ideas. We know what they do, but why they do it and how their minds work we do not know. It is as true today as it ever was that ''as a man thinketh in his heart so he is,'' and only as we understand their basic thoughts and the premises from which they work can we understand and interpret the reasons and logic behind what they do. May I give this illustration:

During the war I was a doctor at the Brisbane General Hospital, Australia. Into that hospital they brought a man who told me that he had put his finger down his throat to make himself vomit, because the Yanks were going to poison him. I must explain, Congressmen, that all Americans are referred to as ''Yanks'' in our country. I am sorry for this and do not mean to be insulting. I said, ''How do you know''? He said, ''Oh, I saw them watching me while I had my dinner.'' I said, ''Why are they going to poison you?'' He said, ''I don't know.'' I asked, ''Has your wife been

running around with the Yanks?''—that did happen sometimes in our country, I regret to say. He replied, ''Oh no, nothing like that.'' I said, ''I know that they aren't going to poison you.'' He said, ''I know that they are.'' He was not violent; he was not vicious; he wasn't screaming, shouting, yelling; he had not been drinking; he didn't have staring eyes. He looked the same as we do, but in his mind he had this idea. I diagnosed him as a paranoic and sent him to the mental ward, but he wasn't a bad case and his wife came and took him home.

About a week later he came up to the hospital for a certificate. His wife was with him and I said, ''I hope that you have that silly nonsense about the Yanks poisoning you out of your mind.'' He merely indulged in a sheepish grin without saying a word. His wife said, ''O those Yanks, he has driven me mad about those Yanks.'' A week later an American officer went into one of the public lavatories in Queen St., Brisbane, and was shot dead with a sawn-off shot gun. His assailant raced away. The Police investigated, looking for the motive and the associations, but ran up against a blank wall. They did not find one clue. A week later another American officer in a suburb of Brisbane called Wilston was shot dead with the same sawn-off shot gun. This time they caught the culprit. It was this man Everett by name. He was on a baker's delivery van, going from house to house giving bread to the housewives, handling money, giving change, playing with the kiddies—apparently normal —but deep down in his mind he had an idea, and that idea was that the Yanks were going to kill him. He regretted intensely their design, but knew it was true and a man must protect himself. He got the shot gun, cut off the barrel, cut off the handle, and carried it around for self defense. Just before the American officer got him, as he thought, he shot him dead. He was taken and judged criminally insane and was confined for life to an institution for the criminally insane. But the point is this:

When did he become dangerous? What he believed determined his conduct, his character and his destiny. There is nothing so dangerous as an idea in the minds of men.

We should have known this man was dangerous and apt to kill, not because he was an evil character, not because he was yelling and shouting and screaming, but because the logical fulfillment of the idea in his mind would lead to such a course of action.

Nature of Communist Mind

To understand what the Communists do, we need to understand the ideas in their minds. When we know what is in their minds, what they do, not only becomes understandable, but, within measure, it becomes predictable.

At a meeting in New York, September 1952, I prophesied that the Russians and the Communists were going to turn anti-Semitic. I did not have any inside information but knowing the channels of their minds and their thoughts, it was surely the most logical thing for them to do. You know how the fulfillment of that prophecy has come to pass. Later on I will show you the grounds on which I made that prophesy.

Communist Philosophy

What we need to do is to understand their minds and their thoughts. Basically, Communists have certain beliefs. Their philosophy is what is called Dialectal Materialism. I cannot go into that today. I would like to, but very few people are interested in philosophy; rather are they interested in practical results, but unless we understand something of the philosophy of the Communists we know nothing about them whatsoever. People who are interested in what Communists do, but not in their philosophy, are like dairy farmers who are interested in milk but have no interest in cows. The underlying integrating force that impels their every action and integrates their national fronts into a comprehensive whole is the philosophy which motivates their thought processes.

I cannot go fully into the dialectic, but I would like to tell you some of the basic Communistic concepts. The first one, which they get from the dialectic, is, that they are ordained to rule the world; this conquest is fixed in the eternal nature of things. They believe that the same force that determines that the sun shall rise in the morning has ordained that they shall rule the world. World conquest is as essential to the being of Communism as water is to fish life. The moment any Communist ceases to believe in its certainty,

he ceases to be a Communist. Communists are utterly convinced that they are ordained to rule the world.

The Class War

Secondly, from the dialectic, they are convinced that we are, here and now, in a state of war. If you will pardon me, I will just give you the essentials of the dialectic from which they derive this.

Marx was a dialectician before he was a Communist and the dialectic teaches that everything that exists is in terms of a conflict of opposing forces. Everything is interpenetrated by its opposite. You cannot have up without down; you cannot have good without evil; you cannot have ugliness without beauty and you cannot have death without life. There is this fundamental conflict of opposite forces which gives the dynamic of being.

According to the dialectic, this clash of opposite forces, the progressive force being called the thesis, the reactionary force called the antithesis, gives a period of relatively stable progress. Inevitably, however, a critical point is reached, where slow, gradual change gives rise to rapid, fundamental change. There is a total overthrow of the antithesis by the thesis. The thesis negates the antithesis and one gets what they call the transformation from quantity into quality and the emergence of a new order called the synthesis.

The Communists' dialectic interpretation of being gives us thesis, antithesis, critical point and synthesis.

Karl Marx took the dialectic and began to analyze capitalism. He said that we have the perfect example of the dialectic in the clash between those who own the means of production and those who sell their labor for wages. One class he calls the bourgeoisie, the other class he calls the proletariat. He says these two classes are in conflict; they are at war.

Remember, Karl Marx did not declare the class war; he did not invent it, but, according to their thoughts, he discovered it in exactly the same way as Newton discovered the Law of Gravity. Karl Marx discovered the class war. It is the law of being and can only terminate with the absolute victory of the progressive thesis of the pro-

letariat over the reactionary antithesis of the bourgeoisie.

The class war in its historical development has changed. To begin with, it was purely on a national plane, but, with the progress of history, the proletariat has come to power in Russia, in China, in Eastern Europe; while the bourgeoisie remains in power in America, in England, and in all other countries.

Thus the class war, which was previously national, is now international and it is the basic Communist concept that we are now at war; that war is a state of being. It is not declared by Russia. It is not chosen by Russia. They have simply recognized its existence. All that can vary, is the technique by which this war is to be implemented.

In this Marxian concept there is nothing that we can do that can bring about a state of war. All we can do is make an attack which could cause a certain specific counter-attack. Their basic concept is "we are at war."

Since we are at war, since war is the nature of being, what is peace? The Communists speak always of peace. Peace is their chief weapon of war. Peace is the word on their lips by which they are conquering millions on the face of the earth. Since war is the nature of being, what is peace?

Definition of Peace

To understand the definition of peace you have to understand the dialectic. Peace is the dialectic synthesis which emerges when the progressive thesis of the proletariat utterly overwhelms the reactionary antithesis of the bourgeoisie and by violence and by bloodshed there is established Socialism, under the dictatorship of the proletariat, which is peace.

Peace, to the Communist, is total victory. This it is by definition. By definition the Communist or Proletariat class is the peaceful class. There is no action that they can do which is not a peaceful action. If they shoot you it is with a peaceful gun; they put a peaceful bullet into your warlike brain; they give you a peaceful death and they bury you in a peaceful grave.

When the forces of Communist China advance with tanks and

guns, bombs and bayonets, littering the field with dead, what is it? The advance of the forces of peace.

The Communists are utterly dedicated to peace. When they say they stand for peace they can say it with the utmost sincerity, because peace, according to their system of thought and definition, is total Communist victory.

Similarly, we could go into the definitions of loyalty, patriotism, justice, morality and truth itself. To understand what they are talking about we need to speak their language. We cannot do this without a knowledge of the dialectic.

With regret I leave the dialectic as I must soon conclude.

Rise of the Communists

The Communist program of advance, from 1917 to the present has not been casual; it has not been opportunist; it has not been unplanned; rather, it is the fruit of the victory of Joseph Stalin over Leon Trotsky in 1924.

In 1924 Lenin died and a struggle for power broke out between Stalin and Trotsky. Trotsky was the classical Marxist, the man of Europe, and he believed that industrialization was essential to socialism and that the conquest of industrialized Europe was the inevitable prelude to world conquest; thus, he wanted to declare the revolution in Germany; to assist it from Russia; to conquer Europe first and he said, "then we will conquer the world.

Stalin advanced an alternative program. In 1924, in his lectures to the students at Sverdlov University, "Problems of Leninism," p. 30, Foreign Languages Edition, Moscow, he said:

War with the West is inevitable. We don't want it now because we would be defeated. Before we have war with the West we must conquer the East and at all costs we must postpone the conflict with the West until we have conquered the East, so that we can ally ourselves with them.

The basic program of world communism has been to seal off the border between Russia and Europe, thrust into the East and postpone the conquest of the West until the task in the East is finished.

Very quickly I would like to outline what I believe is the Communist program of world conquest.

Communist Program for World Conquest

At the moment it is estimated that they have 800 million. They have the Korean situation, which is excellent from their point of view, it (Korea) being a great training ground that trains their soldiers, gives them a good propaganda mechanism. They really do not need it for propaganda, but a few actual wounded bodies helps if they can use them in public demonstrations. They have an increase in population of 10 million a year in China alone. So, if they lose half a million a year in Korea, they are still 9½ million to the good. That is a very ideal situation and they like it, but their main thrust is to be into Southeast Asia and India. In Indo-China there are vast numbers of Chinese Communist troops at the border. France is utterly afraid that on some pretext these troops may intervene. The French Empire is just managing to hold on by the skin of its teeth.

The chain action starts—Indo-China, Burma, Malaya (where the British have been unable to deal with the revolutionaries), Indonesia and the Philippines.. India is scheduled for the revolution very soon. The Chinese are now on the border in Tibet, this being an essential for successful revolution. There is a state of emergency in the border state of Nepal where the Communist agents are crossing. The internal Communist party is armed; their leaders in Parliament have refused to surrender their arms and have announced their rights of revolution. The internal Indian revolution could break out at any time. The whole eastern situation is set up as they desire.

A word about Japan:

Does Stalin want to conquer Japan at present? I would say, no. He is a scientist and a scientist works dynamically and scientifically. He does not just look at a static situation, but dialectically he must look at it in its progressive relationship. Take the position of Japan: 87 million on an island which before the war contained 60 million. At present there is a further increase in population of 2 million a year. In five years' time there will be 97 million and

in ten years' time, there will be 107 million.

Where do these people get their food? They used to get it from China, Manchuria, Korea and Formosa. Of all those areas, Formosa alone is left and it is over-populated. At present they get food from Indo-China, Thailand and from Burma. If that area falls to the Communists, Japan integrates into the Communists' economy or she starves to death.

If we can think of 100 million fanatical Japanese added to the Communists' hordes and sleep soundly at night, we have strong nerves indeed.

The eastern advance is set up. Of course, you must have a diversion in Europe to create the impression that this is the main danger. With what immense success the enemy has fostered this delusion. Unfortunately, many leaders of importance cling to the impression, that Trotsky was in charge of Russian foreign policy. He was the one urging world conquest via Europe. Stalin proclaimed the Asian pathway. We could well circulate the slogan, "Trotsky is dead."

Where is the next area after the East? What is the next accessible area where the people are ignorant, illiterate, backward, where the Communists can stimulate them into internal revolution without risk of open war? The dark continent of Africa is the answer and the path there is via the near east.

The Scientific Program

The Communists are scientists and a scientist is someone who multiplies his own strength and force, by utilizing the natural forces that exist. Communists have never yet taken over any country in the name of Communism. They took Russia in the name of peace and land; they took China in the name of (1) land,—own the land you work; (2) abolition of debt and (3) the elimination of colonial exploitation. "Get the white man out of Asia." Seducing the working man, they go to him in the name of "high wages and shorter working hours." If they wish to manipulate the industrialist, they go to him in the name of "better trading relations and higher profit." If they want the intellectuals, they go to them in the name of "the application of intelligence to the affairs of men and the

recognition of the status of the profession.'' To the ordinary people of the world, they go in the name of ''peace.''

To reach Africa they must go via the land bridge of the Near East, because the Communists to date have conquered no country without a common border with another Communist country since the original conquest of Russia. They can start revolutions at a distance, but they have never been able to consummate them. They must have the common border for the entrance of their agents; for their reinforcements. Without it the maintainance of the revolution is difficult and its consummation impossible. They must have freedom of movement through the Near East to conquer Africa.

What is the dominant emotion in the Near East? Any traveler in that area will quickly tell you. The entire Arab world is bitter, indignant and resentful about the establishment of Israel. They identify Israel with America and with Great Britain, even though Russia was the first country to vote for the partition of Palestine in the U. N. You might give some thought as to why she did that.

How can Stalin turn that bitter, vindictive, emotional hatred surging in the Arab breast to his advantage? He is not bound by any past loyalties, he is not bound by any concept of truth, of any inherent value in human life. Actions speak louder than words. What action can he take that will win the Arabs and identify him with their thoughts? What better method is there than to take his own leading Jews and accuse them of an American inspired Zionist plot to enslave the Arabs; put on a vast spectacle where they make tremendous confessions, naming the names of alleged conspirators, revealing what many Arabs already believe. Then Stalin can prove his sincerity by publicly hanging those who have confessed. Imagine the deep effect of this in the Arab world. It is a national holiday in every Arab city; a day of national rejoicing, when the emotional temperature of the whole area rises in warmth towards Joseph Stalin and consequently it is made infinitely easier for the internal Communist party to recruit members and to consummate its preparations for the conquest of the Arab world. What a boon these trials and executions in Czechoslovakia have been to the Tudeh party of

Iran. The Communist switch to anti-Semitism initiates the new phase of the war of world conquest; the concentration upon the Near East and Africa. If they have the East that gives them 1500 million, then, Africa gives them another 200 million making 17 hundred million; all done without one Russian soldier being involved in armed conflict; all done without any apparent excuse for major war.

That is their idea. When they have eastern Europe, Asia and Africa, then and then only, they will overrun Western Europe. This may be accomplished by telephone, or it may need a little action, but with all Asia and Africa gone, Western Europe will have little will to fight. The world would then be divided into two hemispheres, one with 2,000 million, the other with less than 200 million. You can imagine what would happen then.

Stalin says, that he no longer believes war between Russia and America to be inevitable. This is perfectly true, he doesn't. He believes that if the present program continues, the conquest of this country, after he has psychologically conditioned and trained his forces, will be a walk over, a massacre, but certainly not a war. After he has the whole of Europe, Africa and Asia, he will unleash a million aircraft against this country. From the north, from the south, from the west and from the east they will converge, manned by suicide pilots with no expectation of returning and they will devastate this country within a few days. That is his (Stalin's) idea and program and that is why he says he no longer believes that war between this country and Russia is inevitable. He is using war in our sense of the term and not the Communist sense when he says that.

One very interesting insight into the Communist mind was given in the Czechoslovak trials. Why did these Communist leaders confess?

When I was in Honolulu two weeks ago, I attended a Jewish Synagogue—the first one that I have ever been to—and I heard the Rabbi speak on the Czechoslovak trials. He had a very simple answer, namely, that they were tortured till they confessed. I do

not believe that that is the true answer. That reveals no understanding of the Communist mind.

Character of a Communist

Now, at the highest level, what does it mean to be a Communist? To be a Communist means to accept a suspended death sentence.

Lenin defined the Communists as "dead men on furlough." When one really integrates into the party, one's life, one's will, one's mind becomes the total possession of the party.

Billy Graham told me how, at a forum in France, a French Communist at the University stood up and said, "If the Communists told me to kill my mother, I would kill her without batting an eye-lash." If the Communist Party told him to kill himself, he would also do so, without batting an eye-lash.

Whitaker Chambers was asked by the New York Grand Jury, "What does it mean to be a Communist?" He said, "I searched in my mind for something that they could understand, then I said, 'when I was in the Communist Party I had three heroes'." His second hero is significant to the present argument.

He was a German Jew, who, in 1919, organized the Soviets in the Bavarian Revolution. Following the defeat of the Revolution, he was arrested, court-martialed and sentenced to death. He drew himself up proudly and said, "We Communists are always under sentence of death."

To be a Communist means that one identifies one's mind, will and person, with the mind, will and being of the Party; that whatever the Party demands that one do, one obeys.

Consider those Czechoslovak Communist leaders. In obedience to the Party they lived their lives, killing wherever killing was indicated. War always demands its casulaties.

But now, they have another war action—the war action down into the Near East and into Africa. Every war action demands its casualties and they have the privilege of being the casualties of this action. Being dedicated to the principle—to serve without vanity and to the ultimate degree—these men confess to the most incredible

and impossible crimes and demand their own extermination.

How can we compete with Communism unless we can match their conviction with our conviction; their fervor with our fervor; their dedication with our dedication and their sacrifice with our sacrifice? Unless we believe and serve as passionately as they do, there is a grim and foreboding outlook.

What We Must Do

What must we do? I do not come to you with the solution ready packaged. I am primarily a diagnostician. Understanding is the first essential for any intelligent counteraction and many hours could profitably be spent on the consideration of urgent practical measures. There is nothing so urgent in the practical realm as this. We must return to the God of our fathers. In this conflict we are outnumbered; the leadership of the enemy is vastly better informed, integrated and clear-sighted than our own; they are rapidly overhauling our material advantages in production. The only asset we have to counter-balance this is in our God. Communism is dedicated Godlessness and we must oppose this dedicated Godlessness and bring to our God and our Christ, the faith, fervor, passion and capacity for sacrifice that the Communists bring to malignant materialism and Joseph Stalin. Only thus will the free world be saved. Only thus will we be able to escape the reproach of our slaughtered and enslaved children; only thus can we win. Personally, nationally, specifically and consistently, we must repent and turn to God.

I will close by quoting a poem written by the British Ambassador during the 1914-18 war:

"I vow to thee, my country, all earthly joys above,
Entire and whole and perfect, the service of my love.
The love that asks no questions, the love that stands the test,
That lays upon the altar the dearest and the best;
The love that never falters; the love that pays the price,
The love that makes unflinching the final sacrifice.
But there's another country I've heard of long ago,
Most dear to them that love her, most great to them that know;
We may not count her armies, we may not see her king,

Her fortune is a faithful heart, her pride is suffering;
And soul by soul and silently her shining bounds increase,
And her ways are ways of quietness and all her paths are peace.
I vow to thee my country, My God, My Saviour.
All earthly joys above;
Entire and whole and perfect, the service of my love."

God bless you all.

The Christian Anti-Communism Crusade

The Christian Anti-Communism Crusade is a non-profit organization, incorporated under the laws of the State of Iowa.

Its program is one of education, evangelism and dedication.

Dr. Wm. E. Pietsch, Director of "The Good Night Hour," Station KXEL, (1540 on the dial), Waterloo, Iowa, is President of the Christian Anti-Communism Crusade, while Dr. Fred Schwarz is Executive Director.

The Purposes of the Christian Anti-Communism Crusade

- To deliver lectures on the thought processes of Communism before Congressional leaders, Universities and Colleges, Civic Groups, High Schools, Churches, Chamber of Commerce and Industrial Groups, to instruct them on the character of their enemy and to call them to repentance and dedicated godliness.

- Publication of books, magazines and articles to provide material for study courses in Theological Colleges, Bible Institutes, Educational Establishments of all types, local groups as they are formed and the public at large.

- The utilization of radio and television to bring the message to the very homes of America.

- To serve as a source where dependable information on the nature, strategy and tactics of Communism may be obtained.

Organization and Finance

The financial needs for such a program are heavy, but the very lives of Christians and their children are at stake. We appeal to the Christian public to enroll as members to fight this great threat to our nation.

Annual membership $10.
Life membership $100 or more.

The need is truly urgent. Anyone applying for membership will immediately receive a copy of the two books, "The Heart, Mind and Soul of Communism" and "The Christian Answer to Communism," written by Dr. Schwarz. All gifts will be appreciated, however small.

SPECIAL NOTICE

Dr. Fred Schwarz will conduct a series of broadcasts each Sunday at 7:00 a.m. and 11:00 p.m., and each Monday night, 11:15 p.m., Central Standard Time, over Radio Station KXEL, Waterloo, Iowa, 1540 on the dial. Invite your friends to tune in.

Companion volumes of this booklet

The Heart, Mind and Soul of Communism

and

The Christian Answer to Communism

as well as this booklet, may be purchased from

THE CHRISTIAN ANTI-COMMUNISM CRUSADE

P. O. Box 890

Long Beach 1,

California

PRICE 50c per copy Special rates for bulk purchases

(Application form next page)

Application Form

I, (name).....

of (address).....

.....

hereby:

1. Apply for *annual life membership. Please find enclosed $.....

2. Wish to make a donation to this great cause.

Please find enclosed $.....

3. Desire you to forward me

.....*copy copies of The Heart, Mind and Soul of Communism.

.....*copy copies of The Christian Answer to Communism.

.....*copy copies of The Communist Interpretation of Peace.

Please find enclosed $.....

4. Desire to be placed on your mailing list to be kept in touch with the work of this crusade. Yes

* Delete words not required.

Printed in U. S. A.

Morris Printing Co., Waterloo, Iowa

The Heart, Mind and Soul of COMMUNISM



Dr. Fred Schwarz

Frontispiece

The author of this book, Dr. Fred Schwarz, is a practising physician and surgeon of Sydney, Australia. Prior to that he was a lecturer in Mathematics and Science at the Teachers College, Queensland, Australia. He is a fervent evangelical Christian, lay preacher, and evangelist. He has made a profound study of basic Communist texts and has an understanding of the mind and soul of Communism equalled by very few. His presentation has been sharpened by debates with leading Communists in many parts of the world, and he has a standing challenge to debate any Communist at any time, anywhere. He has travelled extensively throughout the world investigating and exposing Communism. He has toured Japan, The Philippines, Australia, New Zealand, Hawaii, England, Scotland, Ireland, and Europe, as well as making two extensive preaching and lecture tours of the United States. Following are some comments by leading authorities.

"During the past several years I have covered hundreds of similar meetings and I state without reservation that Dr. Schwarz is by far the best-informed man on this subject to whom I have ever listened."

(Signed) Lewis W. Brown
Political Writer and Reporter
Pasadena Independent
Pasadena, California

"This man is a winsome speaker, very highly educated, and one of the best read men I know anything about."

Dr. Bob Shuler

Trinity Methodist Church
Los Angeles, California

CHRISTIAN ANTI-COMMUNISM CRUSADE
Houston Office
P. O. Box 6422, Phone JA 6-1545
Houston 6, Texas

"I am frank to say that Dr. Schwarz contributed more to the understanding of Communism and the world situation than any man who has come our way. He is a forceful speaker and one you would call an authority on Communism."

Floyd D. Golden, President
University of Eastern New Mexico
Portales, New Mexico

"Dr. Schwarz of Australia is the only man I have met in all these years in my work against Communism who has studied its theory, as I have tried to, and can make sense out of it. He presents it clearly, in simple language, and answers it in the same way."

Alfred Kohlberg
New York, New York



DR. FRED SCHWARZ
Physician, Surgeon, World Traveler
of Sydney, Australia

Preface

It gives me great pleasure to recommend the following messages, published in this book, given by Dr. Fred Schwarz in Waterloo, Iowa, over Radio Station KXEL, and also delivered in the same city at the Walnut Street Baptist Church in cooperation with The Fellowship of the Faith churches. These messages are of tremendous importance to every man and woman, and we trust that you will read them and that they may awaken within you the responsibility to take action now before it is too late.

Dr. Schwarz is well qualified to present this subject as a medical man, a world traveler, a prophetic student, and one who is familiar with world events, especially as they relate to the horrors of atheistic Communism. As I sat and listened to these messages, they were an inspiration to me to go on more faithfully than ever in witnessing to the saving and keeping power of our Lord Jesus Christ. Dr. Schwarz places the emphasis on the remedy for Communism which is the Gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ. He has removed his ecclesiastical glasses, and presents the message to the whole church of God irrespective of denominational boundary lines.

Dr. Schwarz is available for lectures on this vital subject, and you can communicate either with him directly or with our office and mutually satisfactory dates will be arranged. We would appreciate your cooperation in getting out these messages while the door is still open. The missionary lights are going out and drastic action needs to be taken at once.

This booklet has been prepared with a hope of awakening people to the perils of Communism. You can do your part by distributing them. We wish you would join in prayer with us that God may stem the tide, and let us never forget that God is still on the throne. God's answer to this world

wide menace is clearly defined in II Chronicles 7:14, "If My people, which are called by My name, shall humble themselves, and pray, and seek My face, and turn from their wicked ways; then will I hear from heaven, and will forgive their sin, and will heal their land."

Dr. Schwarz is at present on a speaking and lecture tour of the United States. Churches, civic groups, and others desiring to procure his services should write to Dr. Fred C. Schwarz, or to Dr. W. E. Pietsch, Box 890, Long Beach 1, California.

W. E. Pietsch, General Director
Evangelize America Program

Address all mail to the Evangelize America Program, Box 890, Long Beach 1, California. Any personal matters can be addressed to Dr. Fred Schwarz and letters will be forwarded to him.

The Heart, Mind and Soul of Communism

In 1917, in a cafe in Geneva, Switzerland, an intensely ambitious and fanatical man sat writing furiously. He had written there for many years, an exile from his native land of Russia, living in the expectation of the great day of revolution when he would be called to the center of the world's stage. He was the acknowledged leader of a small Marxist sect, the Bolshevik section of the Russian Social Democratic Labor Party. To the majority of Marxists he was an extremist, unduly schismatic, tinged with anarchistic ideas, sincere but dangerous. He had, scattered throughout Russia and the prisons of the world, 40,000 followers, devoted to their leader, equally fanatical, and unreservedly dedicated to the ideas of revolution and world conquest.

Suddenly, in February of 1917, the news burst upon the world of a great Russian upheaval. The Czar was dethroned, a parliament was established to guide the steps of a newborn republic, and the Social Revolutionary leader, Kerensky, was called to the helm. Lenin and his scattered followers hastened to the new center of revolution, Petrograd, since renamed Leningrad. Stalin returned from Siberian exile, Trotsky came from a Canadian concentration camp, and Lenin travelled by armored train across embattled Germany to his native land, leaving Geneva, the city of his exile. On arrival Lenin announced to the other non-bolshevik revolutionaries that he alone, supported by his bolshevik fragment, would conquer and rule the vast territories of Russia. They looked at him in amazement and said, "Farewell Lenin the Marxist; welcome Lenin the Anarchist." Zealously, scientifically, and ruthlessly he set to work to make his prediction come true. In April he renamed the Bolshevik section of the Russian Social Democratic Labor Party the Communist Party of Russia. In October the Communists organized a second revolution, overwhelmed the new infant republic, and Lenin became dictator of all Russia.

There then came to pass the modern miracle of the world. An expansive program of conquest was initiated which has been successful beyond the wildest dreams of avarice. History records no movement growing, conquering, consolidating, and expanding as Communism has unceasingly done since that time. The statistics are startling, even terrifying. In 1917 they had 40,000 followers; in 1952 they are in absolute control of 800,000,000. They have multiplied those under their control by 20,000 in 35 years, an increase of 2 million percent. To consumate their dream of world conquest they merely need to multiply the present population under their control by less than 3. Anyone who is not startled and profoundly alarmed by these figures is evidently free from the responsibilities of rational comprehension, satisfied to live a mere animal existence with no thought of the morrow.

How has this tremendous success been accomplished? What tremendous dynamic of power is concealed within the categories of Communism that has driven it forward as an irresistible whirlwind? How has it managed to captivate the mind and imagination of young and old, mobilize the intelligence, loyalty and capacity to sacrifice of those so captivated, discipline them and transform them into the mold of a Communist Cadre, and then send them forth—limitless in enthusiasm, confident of victory, careless of personal death —to lay waste and conquer the earth?

WHAT IS COMMUNISM?

Communism is a religion of promise. It has advanced across the world on the wings of a promise. The promise is two-fold in nature. One aspect of the Communist promise is very well known, but the other is almost unknown. One aspect appeals to the poor, the ignorant, and the underprivileged; the other aspect appeals to the wealthy, the intellectually superior, and the idealistic reformers.

To the poor of the earth—and they are legion—the servants of Communism go with this message: "Follow me, and I will build a new world for you and your children, a world from which hunger and cold have been forever banished; a world in which war and pestilence are mere historic memories, a world without exploitation of man by man, a world without racial animosity and discrimination, a world of peace and plenty, a world of culture and intellect, a world of brotherhood, liberty, and justice". Can you imagine the appeal of this promise to those millions living in the narrow no-man's land between malnutrition and starvation, never having had the comfortable sensation of retiring to bed after a full and satisfying meal in the knowledge that at least food and raiment for the days ahead are assured? Can you imagine the appeal of this promise to the millions who watch their children die in birth or during their first years, the victims of filth, starvation, and preventable disease carried by flies and mosquitoes? The force of this appeal is multiplied when the messenger is obviously sincere and is willing to leave his own home and the land of his birth, to forsake his family and loved ones to carry this message to these unfortunate poor. Identifying himself with their woes, he lives like them, eats their food, and daily risks his life to bring the message he bears to more and more who stand in dire need. Surely it does not require any great faculty of imagination to understand the tremendous appeal such a program must have in those dark lands of ignorance, illiteracy, hunger, and disease—the lands of the East. That aspect of the Communist promise is widely known and easily understood.

There is a second portion of the promise that is used, not to captivate the poor, but to seduce the rich; not to enlighten the ignorant, but to enlist the educated; not to bribe the cynical,but to ensnare the idealistic. Not only is there to be a new society created, but there is also to emerge a new and finer mankind. Human nature itself is to be transformed into

something infinitely finer and more beautiful. Mankind is to be redeemed from vice, depravity, and sin in all its forms. The Methodist hymn well expresses this vision in the following words:

"These things shall be; A mightier race
Than ere the world has seen shall rise
With light of knowledge in their eyes."

Evangelical Christians, above all others, should be able to understand the appeal of such a promise. They are dedicated to the redemption of man through the Gospel of the Grace of God revealed in Jesus Christ. How they rejoice when a wayward sinner finds his way in repentance and faith to the foot of the Cross of Calvary and rises a new man in Christ Jesus. What a rejoicing there was in Christian circles a few years back when in the Billy Graham campaign a prominent radio announcer and a minor gangster found Christ. The very temperature of the evangelical Christian climate was raised—hearts rejoiced, purses and pocketbooks opened, and many Christians received a new vision and made a new dedication of their lives to Christ.

Communism is not a program to cure one or two, but to cure all of the sins of the whole world. Its plan is not to reform one drunkard but to eliminate all drunkeness, all crime, all vice, and everything that spoils and mars what man should be. Surely the appeal of such a vision can be well understood. Often during the question time at the conclusion of an address, the following request is made: "Please explain the appeal Communism has to those who have nothing to gain and everything to lose by its success. I can understand its appeal to the poor and ignorant, but please explain to me how it appeals to millionaires, college professors, and ministers of religion. That I cannot understand." Surely this problem presents no difficulty when we see the promise of the creation of a new and redeemed mankind. What nobler vision could any man have? To this mighty task every capacity

of body and mind should be dedicated—the task of creating a New Heaven and a New Earth wherein the Redeemed may dwell. Failure to comprehend this central truth is responsible for some of the most common misconceptions with regard to Communism. How often we used to hear it said, "Communism is all very well in theory, but it won't work because of the weakness of human nature". No Communist ever proposed to establish the Communist society with present sinful human nature. Before the social order of Communism can come to pass, the new and redeemed mankind must emerge from the ashes of the destroyed Capitalistic Civilization.

COMMUNISM AND SCIENCE

To promise is one thing; to fulfill is another. How do the Communists propose to bring their promise to pass? By what means will they be enabled to work this incredible transformation? The Communists answer by one word: "SCIENCE".

During the last century a tremendous transformation has been wrought in the material world. How many of us would be willing to return to the conditions of life enjoyed—pardon the word—by our great great grandparents of that era? Imagine what you would do when punished by a toothache—a visit to the barber who did his best with the assistance of a large pair of forceps and two or three strong helpers. The story of surgery of those days would turn the stomach of the strongest. It was a nightmare of agony, haste, ignorance, dirt, germs, suppuration, and death. It was a world without electricity and all it brings, without modern transportation, without central heating, refrigeration, trash disposal or even primitive sanitary facilities in populous areas. It was a world without baths, as bathing is a modern habit. It was a world of ignorance, pain, hardship, disease, and premature death. Every baby born had but half the life expectancy of those here today. What has wrought the

change? The answer is one word: "SCIENCE".

Consider the world of agriculture, with the quality, variety, and abundance of food products, not to mention the world of beauty and flowers. A mere century or two ago the economist, Malthus, could mathematically prove that mankind would always be fighting famines by the very nature of things. Animal life, including humans, must alway increase more rapidly than their food supply. Yet today the people of this country live in a land of abundance, veritably a paradise of profusion, enjoying food of the highest quality practically unrestricted. What has brought about this profusion of food products? Science, with its application of scientific principles to plant breeding, resulting in the development of species of plants suitable to the individual terrain and the climatic characteristics of the various regions of the country. A whole chapter could be devoted to the study of corn alone —the different varieties, its disease resistance, its special flavors for human consumption, its adaptability to the most specialized features of topical and climatic conditions of any area. Science has transformed the world of agriculture.

A very similar story could be told in the realm of animal husbandry. The domestication of animals; the selective breeding of the most productive strains of poultry, sheep, and cattle; the building of characteristics suitable for peculiar environments—all this has been so convincingly accomplished with great benefit to the human race. The Communists propose to use this same Science to transform human nature itself. The idea is provocative yet fascinating. How do they propose to apply scientific principles? Let us enquire further.

Science consists of a knowledge of the laws of nature and of an application of the forces of nature, within the framework of those laws, to accomplish a desired purpose. Science is dependent upon the laws of nature; it cannot act independently of them. Let us take the manufacture of steel

as a scientific process. Steel cannot be made out of good intentions, by the mere application of industrious, well-intentioned effort; it cannot be created from brotherly love. Steel is the end-product of a scientific sequence of steps. Firstly, the correct raw materials must be secured—the coal and iron ore. Then these raw materials must be treated in the appropriate manner, associated together in the correct relationship of temperature and humidity. There is an inescapable sequence of scientific steps before the end product can mature. There can be no steel without the furnace; the heat of the furnace may be searing and terrible, but there is no escaping it. There is a sequence of steps involved in any scientific project, and none of these steps can be eluded because they are distasteful.

Communism acquired great prestige among the intellectuals by reason of its claim to be scientific. Its creators, Marx and Engels, grouped together all preceding socialists under the heading "utopian". They considered them unrealistic dreamers, unaware of the nature of social and economic laws and the steps necessary to produce the new Communist man. The most famous classical document of Communism is the pamphlet by Engels entitled "Socialism—Utopian and Scientific". It has been translated into more languages than the Communist Manifesto itself.

Scientific Marxism begins wth three basic hypotheses to serve as the foundation for the scientific program. These may be classified as follows:

1. Atheism.
2. Materialism.
3. Economic Determinism.

ATHEISM

Communism clearly enunciates, "There is no God".

Karl Marx was an atheist before he was a Communist. Atheism was his first and last intellectual love. His earliest writings were attempts to prove that the German philosopher, Hegel, was an atheist. From the fiber and texture of his atheism he built his philosophy and program of Communism. His greatest disciple, Lenin, commences his pamphlet on religion with the words, "Atheism is a fundamental portion of Marxism, of the theory and practice of scientific socialism". Communism without atheism is cancer without malignancy, a contradiction in terms. When Communism rejects God it simultaneously rejects all supernatural moral law, all absolute criteria of truth and error. It abolishes heaven and hell and all absolute values associated with human life. Man is left in a battlefield where the laws are his own to make or break, where all codes of ethics and morality are relative, discretionary and subject to change. The criterion of moral value becomes objective success; the world becomes a pragmatists' dream.

MATERIALISM

Having disposed of the question of God, the next subject to be considered was the nature of man. Here Communism is equally specific; man is matter in motion and nothing more. The entire universe of which man is a part is entirely material. Thought is a quality of matter; matter thinks; the brain secretes thoughts as the liver secretes bile. The total life of mankind—thoughts, emotions, sentiments, culture and religion—are simply the product of the motion of his material constituents. Man is an animal and nothing more. In the dim past ages of antiquity, by some yet unknown materialistic process, a chemical aggregation of molecules took to itself the quality of being matter; a unicellular, protoplasmic, primordial mass came into being and an evolutionary sequence of events commenced. Reproduction, differentiation, selection, mutation, and countless more materialistic phenomena ensued and all life came into being. At the apex of the evolutionary tree there stands man, the first of the

animals, yet an animal and no more. He has no spirit, nor yet any soul. As there is no God he obviously cannot have been made in the image of that which does not exist. There is no continuity associated with individual life; there is no heaven to gain or hell to shun. There is no special value associated with every individual life. Each human is an animal; the totality of the individuals comprise the human race; the future of the race is significant, that of the individual is insignificant. The race of mankind can be scientifically improved by recourse to the normal laws and techniques of animal husbandry.

ECONOMIC DETERMINISM

The human individual possesses certain characteristics of social and individual life, certain patterns of thought and emotional life. How is the personality and character of each individual derived? What determines what each animal shall think? What emotions shall accompany such thoughts? What shall be the pattern of moral, social, and religious behavior that emerges? It is at this point that Marx makes his greatest contribution to human thought, so we are told. This is the discovery which, according to his great co-worker, Frederick Engels, transformed economics from empiricism to science. In simple language here it is: The entire personality, including thoughts, emotions, religious experiences, family attitudes, sentiments, and artistry is derived from the prevailing mode of economic production. We are the captive creations of the Capitalistic System. It has ordained what we shall think, how we shall feel, and what we shall do in any given situation. The Communist Manifesto makes this lucidly plain. It specifically states that the family as we know it—the hallowed relationship of parent and child—is derived from the Capitalistic Economic System and that parental love will vanish with the vanishing of Capitalism. It goes further and specifically states that the concepts of freedom and justice are derivatives of the class

struggle, and that when class struggle ceases the concepts will disappear. No one is individually responsible for his character or thoughts. As his class of social origin has determined, so he thinks, feels and acts. To change character and personality what is needed is a basic change in the economic system.

It follows logically that all undesirable human characteristics are derived from the prevailing economic system. Communists are realists. They affirm the depravity of human nature; everywhere men and women are lazy, ignorant, self-indulgent, patriotic, and religious – no one could build a Communistic social order from such poor raw material. The first essential is a radical program aimed at the root cause of human depravity — the Capitalistic Economic System, and a consequent program to purify and perfect mankind. This must be done in a scientific manner. The inescapable sequence of scientific steps is as follows, some of which will be further discussed in more or less detail:

1. Destruction of the Capitalistic System, the root of all evil, by a violent revolution.

2. Institution of the Dictatorship of the Proletariat.

3. Liquidation of those classes of society incurably diseased by Capitalism and considered dangerously infective.

4. Segregation of those diseased but capable of useful work in conditions of isolation.

5. Hospitalization of the diseased but curable in "corrective" labor camps.

6. Re-education of the total population in new relationships of labor with the emphasis on labor rather than reward.

7. The emergence of the young generation with characters uninfluenced by Capitalism and appropriate to a

socialist environment.

8. The perfection of human nature.

9. The withering away of the State; the Dictatorship of the Proletariat.

10. The emergence of Communism.

THE DESTRUCTION OF CAPITALISM

This must be accomplished by a violent revolution. The Communists have always been perfectly frank on this subject. Beginning with the Communist Manifesto, which says, "We openly declare that our ends can be attained only by the forcible overthrow of all existing social conditions," the identical sentiment has been repeated ad nauseam in all the writings of the Communist hierarchy and in official pronouncements of the Comintern and the Cominform. They categorically reject any suggestion that the transition from Capitalism to Socialism can be by the peaceful pathway of reform. One of the principal epithets of abuse in a somewhat extensive vocabulary is the word "reformist," a term of ridicule and contempt. Scientific law has written that the change-over must be both revolutionary and violent. This is determined both from their philosophy of dialectical materialism and from a fake evaluation of the economic forces in society. To use a Marxian analogy: Force is the midwife to deliver the Socialist order from the womb of a decadent Capitalism. Originally the transition was to be the operation of spontaneous forces automatically produced by the progress of Capitalism. The maturing of the Capitalistic Society inevitably produced the Proletariat, the propertyless mass of industrial slaves who became the grave-diggers of Capitalism. However, a new twist came to this idea when Bolshevism was born at the Congress of the Russian Social Democratic Labor Party in 1903. Lenin, the founder of Bolshevism, and thus of Fascism, substituted the idea that the revolution was to result from the scientific planning and ex-

ecution of the Party, which was the class-conscious vanguard of the Proletariat. He replaced the idea of spontaneity with the idea of planned conspiracy. Every Party member became a disciplined conspirator dedicated to the goal of the overthrow of the government by force and violence. The action of the government in charging the leading members of the Party with conspiracy to violently destroy constitutional government is soundly based and an excellent demonstration of "government by law" within the framework of a democracy.

In 1917 the party of Lenin achieved the first success in its campaign for world conquest when it organized a violent revolution in Russia, bringing it to absolute power. Beset as he was with incredible difficulties, Lenin nevertheless took the requisite time in 1920 to write a textbook to direct the Communist conspirators of the world in the technique of organizing the violent revolution to seize power in their own respective countries. The book is one of the Communist classics. a "must" in reading for every recruit, and is entitled "Leftwing Communism—an Infantile Disorder". It is the blueprint for the internal conquest of countries by Communism. It is one of the most cynical, yet Satanically clever, books ever written. Lenin shows how as true scientists Communists must manipulate the forces in each country from behind the scenes and have millions unconsciously working for them. The key to the program is the word "Infiltration"—infiltration of governments, of churches, of sporting bodies, of social clubs; infiltration of institutions of any and every kind, but above all, infiltration of industrial labor unions. All of these named and implied organizations are to be so scientifically manipulated as to bring to pass a violent revolution. Suffice it for our present purposes to say that in 1949, in Australia, a mere handful of Communists, just 7000 in a population of 8,000,000—less than 0.1% of our people —following in detail the blueprint of Lenin, went within an inch of the conquest of the entire country by armed assault, without receiving one dollar or one man from outside to sup-

port them.

THE DICTATORSHIP OF THE PROLETARIAT

The old-fashioned Marxists reasoned thus: Capitalism is the root cause of all human sin; destroy the Capitalistic System and we will destroy sin. They believed that after the revolution they would be able to introduce a form of society in which men would be free and in which they would receive enough for every need. But into this honeymoon of optimism there came the grim voice of the scientific realist, Lenin. In effect he said: My dear friends, you have forgotten something very important. You are really a crowd of idealistic utopian dreamers. Certainly all human frailty, ignorance, and avarice are derived from the Capitalistic System. That is axiomatic. But you say that all we have to do to remove sin is to destroy the Capitalistic System. You try to go too quickly. When we have destroyed the root of all evil, the fruit remains in the characters of the many millions of the earth, who are diseased and deformed. It is true that their diseased condition will vary in the different countries, but nevertheless mankind in general remains ignorant, illiterate, indolent, avaricious, class-conscious, patriotic, and religious. Before the true Communistic Society can be created, these disease characteristics, a hangover from Capitalism, must be eliminated. To do this, an intelligently applied scientific program, based on the established principles of animal husbandry, must be implemented. To do this it is necessary to have a strong and intelligent power to carry out the program. In the progressive quality of its dialectic heart, history has appointed the Communist Party, the self-conscious, enlightened vanguard of the Proletariat, for this role. Therefore we must establish an absolute dictatorship for this party. We will call it the "Dictatorship of the Proletariat".

Nearly all of the above paragraph is constituted of ideas and thoughts which Lenin expressed to his less-realistic Marxist friends. On page 43 of his book "Problems of

Leninism", published by the Foreign Languages Publishing House of Moscow, Stalin defines the term "Dictatorship of the Proletariat" as "The rule, based on force and unrestricted by law, of the Proletariat over the Bourgeoisie". Put simply this means the rule, based on force and unrestricted by law, of the Communist Party over everyone else. Stalin's definition, as given above, is profoundly interesting. He, along with all other true Communists, rejects two cardinal principles of civilization. The first principle is "The government of law". The power of the Communists is specifically to be unrestricted by law. The second principle is "Government by Consent". The power of the Communists is openly based on force. In this way do the Communists turn back the clock from civilization to barbarism.

Having established the dictatorship of the Communist Party it now becomes their duty to scientifically implement a program directed to the elimination of the residual Capitalist disease and the building of a new and redeemed race of Socialist men and women so that Communism may ultimately come to pass. The steps of this program will now be considered.

LIQUIDATION OF INFECTIOUS SOCIAL CLASSES

The problem has entered the familiar and well-trodden pathway of animal husbandry. The problem may be presented thus: The husbandman, the Communist Party, has transferred his herds from the diseased environment of Capitalism to the disease-free environment of Socialism. Unfortunately, the animals bring with them the disease contracted in their old environment. The dominant motive of the husbandman is to breed a new stock, entirely free from this disease. This cannot be done in a day. Obviously he will have to concentrate on the new generation for his finished product and utilize his present stock in the best possible manner to accomplish the necessary work of the new environment, without permitting them to transmit the disease to the young. The virility and infectiousness of the disease varies according to

that portion of the old environment the animals inhabited. Certain environmental areas, i. e. certain classes of society, produce a more virulent and infectious disease. Obviously these animals must be eliminated for the well-being of the whole program. There is absolutely no element of reprisal or punishment in this liquidation; it is simply a necessary scientific procedure. The husbandman may presumably be very fond of certain diseased animals, but sentiment has no place in a scientific program; the animal must go. This is entirely logical within the framework of the Communist beliefs. Remember there is no God; man is pure animal; there is no question of soul or spirit, of heaven or hell, to be considered. This is simply scientific human betterment on a mass scale. There is in general a complete misunderstanding as to the Communist attitude toward killing in a Socialist Society. I have been a known opponent of Communism for many years, having challenged Communists to debate on any platform in the world. How often friends have said to me, "If the Communists come to power you will be one of the first to be killed." I always pretend innocence and reply, "Is that so? Why?" I am then informed that the Communists will punish me because I have opposed them. I hasten to reply that this reveals a complete failure to understand the very mind of Communism. They do not punish or reward. These are Bourgeois ideas that have no place within a redeemed Communist mind. No enlightened Communist blames me for my opposition to Communism. I am merely the unfortunate victim of my economic environment. Unfortunately I am diseased, and thus a danger to the whole program of human betterment. So I must be liquidated, but no more so than all other members of my social class. Since all personality is derived from our social class, all members of a given class have actually or potentially the dangerous disease of character, and they must all be eliminated. The treatment you are to receive should the Communists come to power is entirely unrelated to the attitude you have adopted to them in the past. Opposition begets no penalty, and support begets no reward. A Bourgeois class of origin begets liquidation.

Thus the mass-murder program of Communism is a logical and inescapable consequence of their basic beliefs. It is science in action. So many have been deceived on this point. They attribute the beastiality and excesses of Communism to the national characteristics of certain races—to Russian imperialism, to Asiatic cruelty, to a Jewish conspiracy of revenge; to anything and everything except the real culprit—that system of ideas and beliefs known as Communism. The murder of millions in Russia was not the excess due to a barbaric past; the liquidation of millions proceeding apace in China is not an example of Oriental cruelty. It is scientific Communism in action. Anglo-Saxon Communism will be just as scientifically ruthless, just as dehumanized as the Russian and Chinese varieties; it believes the same things, and it is as true today as ever, "As a man thinketh in his heart, so he is".

A short while ago I was in Edinburgh, Scotland, and I became involved in argument with a group of Communists conducting a meeting in the main thoroughfare, Princess Street. In the midst of the argument one Communist asked me, "Well, what is freedom?" I replied, "You might define freedom as the right to live like an American, inhabit a comfortable and centrally heated home, drive your own automobile, own a refrigerator, a washing machine, a radio, a television set, eat all the food you desire, and have an argument like this without the police cutting your throat." He replied, "If I was a policeman, I would cut your throat". I said, "Do you really mean that?" He replied, "I certainly do." I called to the surrounding crowd, "Listen to this; here is a good object lesson". Another Communist intervened, "We've all got to die sometime. What does it matter if you die a little sooner instead of later?" They were not angry; they were not facetious; they were simply stating sound Communistic doctrine. Man is an animal. Individual life is insignificant. In the great and noble task of redeeming mankind why worry over a few early deaths by the way.

Thus we see the consistent logic of the Communists. Should you ask them, "You inhuman monsters; do you mean to say you would murder in cold blood millions of people?" they would unhesitatingly reply, "What do you mean by murder? That is a Bourgeois term. Nature has been killing people by countless millions for centuries, killing them by hunger, war, disease, and old age; killing them to no purpose. We have a purpose, and a noble one, and should we hesitate to take the necessary steps because they are unpleasant to our Bourgeois prejudices? How unworthy we would be of the task history has entrusted to us." Cold, inexorable, scientific logic.

Recently I conversed with two very well known men, each of whom had been a member of the American Communist Party for many years. Of both I asked the same question, "What are the plans of the American Communist Party with regard to liquidation in this country?" Both replied in this vein: I often heard it discussed in Party circles. The argument went like this. The character disease is derived from the Capitalistic System. Capitalism in America is more developed than in any other country. Therefore its imprint in personality is deeper. The percentage to be liquidated here will be correspondingly higher. As a tentative figure shall we say about one-third of the American people will be marked for liquidation.

From the two similar answers recounted in the preceding paragraph, we learn that the Communists plan to put to death a mere fifty million people, more or less, based on the present population level in the United States. Who are these people to be? The prime factor to be considered is class of social origin. Mrs. Sikorsky gives an official list of classes designated in the rape of Lithuania and Poland in her book, "The Dark Side of the Moon". Of special interest to church people is "Category 13", which includes persons active in parishes, clergymen, secretaries, and active members of religious communities. In Lithuania the lists for liquidation

and deportation included about 700,000 out of a total population of 3,000,000, slightly less than the one-third proposed for America. But Lithuania had not advanced so far in a Capitalistic sense as has America.

Should the Communist menace conquer this country, it may comfort you to know that the hand that condemns you and your family to death is driven not by malicious vindictive hatred, but by scientific necessity.

LABOR CAMPS

Not all those diseased are immediately liquidated by bullet or bayonet. Others go by the slower pathway of overwork and starvation. Let us return to our animal husbandry analogy. The herd has been transferred to the new environment of Socialism. In this environment a great deal of work cries out to be done, and there is a totally inadequate supply of clean stock for the purpose. It is therefore reasonable to select diseased animals in whom the disease is not overwhelmingly contagious, segregate them, and put them to work until they die. They are not allowed to breed, and thus contaminate the future race, but they can be useful in segregation. This is done under arduous conditions of climatic extremes, overcrowding, malnutrition, and frequent death. Nevertheless, much work useful to Socialism is thus accomplished. Canals and railways are built; salt, coal, gold, and uranium are mined; lumber is felled for export, and cities are built in the frozen Arctic wastes. In these conditions of labor the average time to die takes approximately three years. and much work is accomplished in that time.

This is what the labor camps are in practice, but in theory they are something quite different. They are "personality hospitals" in which the disease due to Capitalism can be cured. The cause of the disease is the false labor relations of the Capitalistic Society wherein labor is associated with profit and reward. The cure consists in being established in new labor relations where labor is its own reward, where it

is divorced from the degradation of gain. We term these "slave labor camps", because in them people are forced to labor and receive nothing in return but the merest minimum of food to maintain existence. The Communists say our opinion is only a revelation of our Bourgeois ignorance. The Communists maintain that these "slave labor camps" are actually only "personality hospitals" wherein people can be re-educated, healed of their grievous Capitalistic disease, and become fit members of the new Socialistic Society. Were you to say to a Communist, "You beast! You mean you would send a twelve year old boy to serve ten years in a labor camp?" he would reply, "If your son was sick would you send him to a hospital?" There is a consistency of logic, and an ethical justification for every inhumanity and bestiality Communism commits. This insulates them from the appeals of reason, decency, and humanity. They even provide these "personality hospitals" free. What generous people they are! As the reader retires tonight it would be a profitable theme of meditation to ponder which he would prefer—immediate liquidation, or re-education in a labor camp. The alternative may soon emerge from the realm of theory to intensely practical politics.

MASS RE-EDUCATION

While the labor camps provide specialized hospitalization, the less fortunate sufferers are not being overlooked. Re-education is provided for them by a new attitude toward labor. Work is now taught to be the great creative force that built the universe and that it is its own reward. However, work nevertheless must bring with it remuneration appropriate to its measure. Every means of speed-up in industry is introduced; labor is exploited in every possible way. The slogan is: "From every man according to his ability; to every man according to his work". The unions become instruments of the dictatorship for the speed-up of work and a means of discipline over the workers. Strikes are forbidden and any incitement to strike is a capital offense. Every factory has its

own jails, late arrival to work is sabotage, and absenteeism is treason. Under these ideal working conditions a new attitude toward labor develops; a new character emerges; the new Socialist man is on the way.

THE EMERGENCE OF YOUNG UNMARRED BY CAPITALISM

Along with this vast program of re-education the much simpler program of the education of the new-born Socialist children comes into being. These have the inestimable benefits of birth into a clean environment. There is no vicious profit motive to despoil them, no patriotism to degrade, and no religion to debauch. All they need is scientific indoctrination, and an appropriate conditioning to fulfill all the needs of the most exacting Socialist master. The sin of bygone days becomes an unpleasant memory. The task of the dictatorship is approaching conclusion.

THE EMERGENCE OF COMMUNISM

As the program of science proceeds and the perfection of personality comes to pass, the rigid state of the dictatorship, with its restrictions on human freedom, becomes unnecessary, and the state begins to wither away. Gradually, by imperceptible degrees, the golden age of Communism comes to pass, in which everyone works for the sheer love of working, everyone gives because it is the glory of his heart so to do. The hand of no man is raised in anger against his brother; the wolf lies down with the lamb; the small child plays on the cockatrice's den; the tuberculous organisms lose their virility; the cancer cells lose their malignity. Everyone takes from the common pool all they need, and men the whole world over brothers are. The slogan of this period is, "From every man according to his ability; to every man according to his need".

This is the dream, the vision that lures men to the Communist hook, the goal at the end of the rainbow. The Commu-

nists have achieved portions of it—the violent and destructive revolution, the mass extermination, and the vile labor camps. The rest remains in the realm of pure hypothesis where it is doomed to die with many past Marxian illusions. Every fact of Communist history contradicts the specious optimism that human nature will perfect itself under the dictatorship of the Proletariat. The evidence against this thesis provided by the Communists themselves is shattering. Take the deterioration that has taken place in the character of leading Communists under the Russian system. In 1917 the Central Committee consisted of 31 members and alternates. The leader, Lenin, attributed the entire success of the Revolution to the sterling characters, undying devotion, and invincible selflessness of this group. Everyone of them had suffered much for the cause, in prison and out of prison, in exile and out of exile. In torture and imminent danger of death they remained loyal, devoted, and invincible. It is noteworthy that these fine characters were formed under Capitalism. At long last the golden day of their dreams came to pass and Socialism covered one sixth of the surface of the earth. Freed from the vicious influence of the Capitalistic System, what wonderful people they must have become! Let the Communists tell us what happened to them. Lenin and Sverdlov died before Stalin came to power. Alexandra Kollontai lived to die a natural death last year. The remainder degenerated into such offal, such swine, such treacherous wild beasts, such hyenas—using Communist terminology—that every one had to be put to death. When Lenin died in 1924 the Politbureau, the highest body of world Communism, had seven members—Zinoviev, Kamenev, Stalin, Bukharin, Trotsky, Rykov, and Tomsky. Stalin alone survives. All the others degenerated and had to be destroyed. The perfection of character is thus revealed as a delusion; the chain of events breaks down; the golden future fades and we are left with the intolerable nightmare of the dreadful present—the dictatorship, the extermination program, the labor camp, horror piled on horror, a veritable living hell. Farewell, perfection. The beast is here, and here he remains.

Truly the Bible says, "The fool has said in his heart there is no God. They have altogether become corrupt, they have done abominable works; there is none that doeth good." From the tainted source of rebellion against God, the poisoned stream of massacre and slavery flows. At its very source, Communism is the epitome of evil. Unless we see this we have no clear vision of where to attack Communism. It must be rejected in its premises—its atheism, its materialism, and its economic determinism. Just as cancer is evil at its origin because of its rebellion against the authority of the body, and just as its later manifestations of agony, horror, and foul-smelling death spring from the laws of its being, so the later manifestations of Communism are but the scientific derivatives of its evil premises. How many avowed Christian leaders have failed to see this. Not long ago I asked the secretary of a certain council of churches at what point the majority of his members turned against Communism. He replied, "After they invaded Czechoslovakia." I said, "Is that the point at which atheism became wrong?" Communism is scientific beastiality; it is hellish in origin and execution.

WHAT CAN I DO?

Always there arises the question, "What can I do? I would like very much to help in this great battle, but I seem so inadequate. The issues are beyond me. When the problem defies the masterminds of state, college, and church, what hope have I of making any significant contribution?" There is something everyone can do and it consists in four things: knowledge, courage, faith, and consecration.

KNOWLEDGE

Whenever the medical profession endeavors to combat a serious disease the first essential is a vast program of research into the nature of the disease, its cause, the laws of its development, the conditions favorable to its spread, and wherein its weakness—its "heel of Achilles"—lies, so that it may be attacked and defeated. Understanding is the irre-

ducible minimum of effective counter-action. Ignorant opposition is frequently valuable assistance to the Communist cause. The quality of ignorance and misunderstanding, at all levels of intellect and education, of the nature and mind of Communism is startling. I could amplify this article with illustration after illustration of the most pitiable ignorance revealed to me personally by high military officers, university professors, and ministers of religion. Such statements as the following we hear every day, and they reveal total incomprehension of the nature of Communism. The first statement is, "We must acknowledge the good in Communism and realize it is primarily a reaction to the evils of Capitalistic Society." The good in Communism is like the "good" in tuberculosis, unappreciated by the victim. Again we hear, "It is possible to preserve peace with Communism", when the Communists' very thought processes define the existing state as class war. Or yet again we hear, "We must eliminate social abuses so that Communism may not flourish." Cancer was never cured by improving the general health. Knowledge is the first weapon in our arsenal of defense. The basic Communist texts are available and these should be studied so that we have an understanding of the Communist laws of thought and their blueprint of conquest. Knowledge is power.

COURAGE

What we discover when we investigate Communism is terrifying. The vastness of the danger oppresses us. We may react in one of two ways. The knowledge may be a "savor of death unto death or life unto life". We may become oppressed and throw in the towel, or we may gird ourselves for the battle, realizing how terrible it will be. Many individuals have to face situations of this nature. They visit their physician to be told they have the dread disease of cancer. They may react in one of two ways—a defeat or a challenge. Some say, "All is finished, life is over", and in despair throw themselves under a train. Others say, "This is grim news.

but I will do my best to overcome it", and they make the decisions required courageously, rearrange their life routine, submit to the drastic surgery necessary, pay the heavy cost, and come through triumphantly. Courage transforms the dread knowledge into a challenge, a matchless sacrifice, a heroic endeavor, and a glorious triumph.

FAITH

The Communists say, "There is no God." We know, "In the beginning, God." God has not abdicated from the throne of the universe. He is an active agent in history and makes even the wrath of man praise him. We have His promise, "When the enemy shall come in like a flood; then will the Spirit of the Lord lift up a standard against him." If we will pray, live righteously, and trust Him, He will not fail in our hour of need. "If God be for us, who can be against us?"

CONSECRATION

Communism has been able to mobilize the loyalty, discipline, and willingness to sacrifice even unto death of countless millions. In the final analysis faith can only be matched by faith, devotion by devotion, and consecration by consecration. Are we who name the name of Christ prepared to make equal sacrifices, to serve with equal unselfishness, to manifest like loyalty and devotion as those who name the name of Stalin?

Rise up, O Men of God,
Have done with lesser things.
Give heart and mind and soul and strength,
Unto the King of Kings.
Rise up, Oh Men of God!

Printed in U. S. A.

THIS IS A CHECK DATE _____

NAME OF BANK

CITY

PAY TO THE ORDER OF **Christian Anti-Communism Crusade** $_____

_____ DOLLARS

SIGNATURE

STREET ADDRESS _____

CITY, STATE _____

PLEASE USE MY GIFT OF _____ **as indicated below:**

() Apply for life membership at a fee of $100.00
() Apply for annual membership at a fee of $10.00
() Contribute $_____ to Crusade's Texas program
() Contribute $_____ to Crusade's International program
() Undertake as God enables me to contribute $_____ per month
to Local Program () to International work ()
() Promise to pray for the Crusade's local and International efforts.

Name _____

Address _____

City _____ Zone ____ State _____

All gifts to the Christian Anti-Communism Crusade are deductible for income tax purposes.

CHRISTIAN ANTI-COMMUNISM CRUSADE
Post Office Box 6422
Houston 6, Texas

WE MIGHT
HAVE PLACED
A STAMP HERE
BUT EVERY
PENNY COUNTS

The Christian Anti - Communism Crusade is a non--profit organization to preserve our life and liberty by a worldwide program of Education, Evangelism and Personal Dedication.

All gifts to the Christian Anti-Communism Crusade are deductible for Income Tax purposes.

File No. 100-9540-TA2

Date Received 10-7-58

From W. P. Strube
(Name of contributor)

3400 Montrose
(Address of contributor)

By K. Jackson
(Name of Special Agent)

To Be Returned Yes ()
No (✓)

Description:

Univ. of St. Thomas school paper "Vision" dated 9-25-58.

FRESHMAN GIRLS
INITIATION —
KNOTTY TAILS

Vision

GAME
SATURDAY

Volume 9 | University of St. Thomas, Houston, Texas | SEPTEMBER 25, 1958 | Number 1

Six Professors Added To Staff

Special Blessing For St. Thomas University

Audience Unsure

In the person of Father Haffey, Chairman of our department of education, the University of St. Thomas was represented in a semi-private audience with His Holiness Pope Pius XII last July 14. His account of the audience follows:

We were a small group, only 22 counting the courier and the bus driver. At Venice we talked with seven priests from San-Francisco who had just come from Rome. The closest they could get to the Holy Father was at a public appearance in St. Peter's Basilica along wih ten thousand other visitors. Audiences for small groups, they said, were just impossible. Things didn't look too good for us, even though we had laid some groundwork before leaving Canada with the Empress of France. From Florence we phoned Father Robillard, rector of the Canadian College at



Reinforcements ready to face Fall classes

By Mary Cooney

As the wheels begin to grind and school activities commence, former students notice new faces among the faculty members.

Dr. Joseph Patrick Kennedy, a former student of this University returns to his alma mater to impart knowledge in the Biology Department. Dr. Kennedy holds a B.A. from the University of St. Thomas, M.A. and Ph.D. from the University of Texas. As a student here his name will be immortalized forever for being instrumental in the forming of the N.A.T.R. (National Association of Turtle Racers) faction which is still functioning here on the campus. Reptiles seem to be of special interest to Dr. Kennedy, and the rumor is that in the course of his studies, he has discovered a new type of lizard. Dr. Kennedy and his wife, also a former student of this institution, are living in the near vicinity of the University.

The center of scholastic endeavors of the University,

File No. 100-9540-1A3

Date Received 10-7-58

From W. P. Strube
(Name of contributor)

3400 Montrose
(Address of contributor)

By K. Jackson
(Name of Special Agent)

To Be Returned Yes ()
No (✓)

Description:

Booklet:
International Communism
(Committee on Un-American
Activities, House of Repres.
85th Congress)

File No. 100-9540-104

Date Received 12-17-57

From Mid-Life Ins. Co.
(Number)

(Number)

By
(Unit)

To Be Returned ()
()

Description:

3 Booklets on Communist.

CHRISTIAN ANTI-COMMUNISM CRUSADE
P. O. Box 6422 Houston, Texas Jackson 6-1545

LIST OF SUBJECTS FOR LECTURES
BY W. P. STRUBE, JR.

"INSURANCE AGAINST COMMUNISM"
"AN INSURANCE PROGRAM FOR WORLD PEACE"
"ORIGIN, ORGANIZATION, AND DISCIPLINE OF THE COMMUNIST PARTY"
"THE HEART, MIND AND SOUL OF COMMUNISM"
"THE COMMUNIST PROGRAM IN EDUCATION AND RELIGION"
"THE PSYCHOLOGY OF COMMUNIST PEACE IN WAR"
"THE CHIEF WEAPON OF COMMUNIST CONQUEST"
"COEXISTENCE - THE CORNERSTONE OF COMMUNIST CONQUEST"
"COMMUNIST USE OF ADVERTISING TECHNIQUES IN THEIR PROGRAM OF WORLD CONQUEST"
"THE COMMUNIST BLUE-PRINT FOR CONQUEST OF THE UNITED STATES"
"CONSTITUTION OR COMMUNIST GOVERNMENT"
"COMMUNISM'S MAJOR ALLIES IN THE UNITED STATES"
"HOW DO MILLIONAIRES, MINISTERS OF RELIGION AND COLLEGE PROFESSORS BECOME COMMUNIST"
"THE ROLE AND RESPONSIBILITY OF MANAGEMENT IN THE BATTLE AGAINST COMMUNISM"
"WORLD EVENTS FROM A COMMUNIST VIEWPOINT"
"KREMLIN UNREST - A SIGN OF STRENGTH OR WEAKNESS"

FILMS AVAILABLE

"THE RED PLAGUE" "COMMUNIST WEAPONS OF ALLURE" "CRIMSON SHADOW"
"DEAD MEN ON FURLOUGH" "COMMUNIST BLUEPRINT FOR CONQUEST"

"COMMUNISM is the BURNING ISSUE OF OUR TIME"

W. P. STRUBE, Jr.

Presents

an integrated picture of Communism.

THE TRUE NATURE of Communism.

How Communist are conquering the world.

What must be done to prevent a Communistic world.

* * * * * * * *

Groups which have been enthusiastic audiences – Civic Clubs, Churches, U. S. Navy Reserves, Management groups, Sororities, Radio, High School and College Groups, Medical associations, P.T.A.'s, etc.

HONORARIUMS AND OFFERINGS FOR SPEAKING ENGAGEMENTS GO 100% TO CHRISTIAN ANTI-COMMUNISM CRUSADE, P. O. BOX 6422, HOUSTON 6, TEXAS. A NON-PROFIT, TAX EXEMPT ORGANIZATION.

* * * * * * * *

SPEAKING ENGAGEMENTS MAY BE SCHEDULED BY CONTACTING

CHRISTIAN ANTI-COMMUNISM CRUSADE

P. O. BOX 6422 HOUSTON 6, TEXAS

JACKSON 6-1545

BIOGRAPHY

Born Hannibal, Missouri

Attended the University of Washington & the University of California.

* * * * * * * *

President, Mid American Life Insurance Co.

Vice-President, National Association of Life Companies

* * * * * * * * * * * *

Secretary, Christian Anti-Communism Crusade

Secretary, Christian Programs, Inc.

CHRISTIAN ANTI-COMMUNISM CRUSADE
P. O. BOX 6422
HOUSTON 6, TEXAS

[COMMITTEE PRINT]

INTERNATIONAL COMMUNISM

(The Communist Mind)

STAFF CONSULTATION WITH FREDERICK CHARLES SCHWARZ

COMMITTEE ON UN-AMERICAN ACTIVITIES

HOUSE OF REPRESENTATIVES

EIGHTY-FIFTH CONGRESS

FIRST SESSION

MAY 29, 1957

(INCLUDING INDEX)



Printed for the use of the Committee on Un-American Activities

UNITED STATES
GOVERNMENT PRINTING OFFICE
92964 WASHINGTON : 1957

COMMITTEE ON UN-AMERICAN ACTIVITIES

UNITED STATES HOUSE OF REPRESENTATIVES

FRANCIS E. WALTER, Pennsylvania, *Chairman*

MORGAN M. MOULDER, Missouri	BERNARD W. KEARNEY, New York
CLYDE DOYLE, California	DONALD L. JACKSON, California
JAMES B. FRAZIER, JR., Tennessee	GORDON H. SCHERER, Ohio
EDWIN E. WILLIS, Louisiana	ROBERT J. McINTOSH, Michigan

RICHARD ARENS, *Director*

CONTENTS

	Page
Synopsis	VII
May 29, 1957:	
Staff consultation with—	
Dr. Frederick Charles Schwarz	1
Index	I

PUBLIC LAW 601, 79TH CONGRESS

The legislation under which the House Committee on Un-American Activities operates is Public Law 601, 79th Congress [1946], chapter 753, 2d session, which provides:

Be it enacted by the Senate and House of Representatives of the United States of America in Congress assembled, * * *

PART 2—RULES OF THE HOUSE OF REPRESENTATIVES

RULE X

SEC. 121. STANDING COMMITTEES

* * * * * * *

17. Committee on Un-American Activities, to consist of nine Members.

RULE XI

POWERS AND DUTIES OF COMMITTEES

* * * * * * *

(q) (1) Committee on Un-American Activities.

(A) Un-American activities.

(2) The Committee on Un-American Activities, as a whole or by subcommittee, is authorized to make from time to time investigations of (i) the extent, character, and objects of un-American propaganda activities in the United States, (ii) the diffusion within the United States of subversive and un-American propaganda that is instigated from foreign countries or of a domestic origin and attacks the principle of the form of government as guaranteed by our Constitution, and (iii) all other questions in relation thereto that would aid Congress in any necessary remedial legislation.

The Committee on Un-American Activities shall report to the House (or to the Clerk of the House if the House is not in session) the results of any such investigation, together with such recommendations as it deems advisable.

For the purpose of any such investigation, the Committee on Un-American Activities, or any subcommittee thereof, is authorized to sit and act at such times and places within the United States, whether or not the House is sitting, has recessed, or has adjourned, to hold such hearings, to require the attendance of such witnesses and the production of such books, papers, and documents, and to take such testimony, as it deems necessary. Subpenas may be issued under the signature of the chairman of the committee or any subcommittee, or by any member designated by any such chairman, and may be served by any person designated by any such chairman or member.

* * * * * * *

RULE XII

LEGISLATIVE OVERSIGHT BY STANDING COMMITTEES

SEC. 136. To assist the Congress in appraising the administration of the laws and in developing such amendments or related legislation as it may deem necessary, each standing committee of the Senate and the House of Representatives shall exercise continuous watchfulness of the execution by the administrative agencies concerned of any laws, the subject matter of which is within the jurisdiction of such committee; and, for that purpose, shall study all pertinent reports and data submitted to the Congress by the agencies in the executive branch of the Government.

RULES ADOPTED BY THE 85TH CONGRESS

House Resolution 5, January 3, 1957

* * * * * * *

RULE X

STANDING COMMITTEES

1. There shall be elected by the House, at the commencement of each Congress,

* * * * * * *

(q) Committee on Un-American Activities, to consist of nine Members.

* * * * * * *

RULE XI

POWERS AND DUTIES OF COMMITTEES

* * * * * * *

17. Committee on Un-American Activities.

(a) Un-American activities.

(b) The Committee on Un-American Activities, as a whole or by subcommittee, is authorized to make from time to time, investigations of (1) the extent, character, and objects of un-American propaganda activities in the United States, (2) the diffusion within the United States of subversive and un-American propaganda that is instigated from foreign countries or of a domestic origin and attacks the principle of the form of government as guaranteed by our Constitution, and (3) all other questions in relation thereto that would aid Congress in any necessary remedial legislation.

The Committee on Un-American Activities shall report to the House (or to the Clerk of the House if the House is not in session) the results of any such investigation, together with such recommendations as it deems advisable.

For the purpose of any such investigation, the Committee on Un-American Activities, or any subcommittee thereof, is authorized to sit and act at such times and places within the United States, whether or not the House is sitting, has recessed, or has adjourned, to hold such hearings, to require the attendance of such witnesses and the production of such books, papers, and documents, and to take such testimony, as it deems necessary. Subpenas may be issued under the signature of the chairman of the committee or any subcommittee, or by any member designated by any such chairman, and may be served by any person designated by any such chairman or member.

* * * * * * *

26. To assist the House in appraising the administration of the laws and in developing such amendments or related legislation as it may deem necessary, each standing committee of the House shall exercise continuous watchfulness of the execution by the administrative agencies concerned of any laws, the subject matter of which is within the jurisdiction of such committee; and, for that purpose, shall study all pertinent reports and data submitted to the House by the agencies in the executive branch of the Government.

SYNOPSIS

The international Communist conspiracy will achieve its goal of world domination in about 16 years, if its present rate of expansion continues unabated, Dr. Frederick C. Schwarz, executive director of the Christian Anti-Communist Crusade, predicts in the accompanying staff consultation.

The Christian Anti-Communist Crusade is an international organization dedicated to the exposure of the ideological fallacies of communism.

Dr. Schwarz, an Australian physician, surgeon, and psychiatrist, has spent many years in study and research into the basic philosophy of communism. In furtherance of his work, he has traveled extensively in many areas of the world and is regarded as an authority in the field. He is now in the United States as part of his sixth world lecture tour on international communism, under the auspices of the American affiliates of the Christian Anti-Communist Crusade.

Dr. Schwarz' consultation with the staff of the Committee on Un-American Activities is released for the purpose of presenting further insight into the motivating forces of international communism.

The Kremlin, he said, has set the year 1973 as its deadline for accomplishing world domination. During the next 10 years it expects to see consolidation of its program in Asia and the isolation of the United States. Soviet leadership, he emphasized, is confident that it can achieve its goals without recourse to a third world war.

"I regret to say that by every standard test the Communists have been making terrifying progress and they are winning and we are losing," Dr. Schwarz stated.

Current Communist disarmament discussions, he continued, are "an act of war," not a prelude to peace.

Military stalemate, he added, would free the resources of the Soviet Union for further advances in its program of global conquest.

"Negotiation with the Soviet Union," Dr. Schwarz warned, "is impossible. To think we can do it is to indicate a failure to understand communism so completely that it approaches mental illness."

Dr. Schwarz declared that brutality of communism is not a departure from its classic ideology, but is the very basis of the Communist program.

"Inherent within the theory of communism," he said, "is the greatest program of murder, slaughter, and insanity conceivable. To the Communists murder, treachery, and torture are moral acts."

Dr. Schwarz characterized communism as a pseudo-science that bases its doctrine on three points: First, that there is no God, a denial of moral law and all that it implies; second, that man is a material machine, completely describable in terms of chemistry and physics, with no value and no continuity of life; third, that communism is economic determinism.

"Every act that contributes to the Communist conquest is a peaceful act in their eyes," Dr. Schwarz continued. "If they take a gun, they take a peaceful gun, containing a peaceful bullet, kill you peacefully and put you in a peaceful grave." Thus, he explained, Khrushchev could call the Russian butchery in Budapest "glorious peace."

Dr. Schwarz warned against the fallacy of trying to combat communism by accepting what is essentially communism's materialistic approach:

"When we want people of the world to resist the Communist idea and to embrace the idea of freedom, we think that if we give them material benefits this will automatically come to pass, and so the idea is to give economic aid and military assistance in the expectation that communism will lose its appeal and freedom will triumph.

"The foundation is wrong. Materialistic measures do not control the minds and the hearts of the people. This must be done in a more direct fashion. We need a scientific approach that will utilize the moral, cultural, and spiritual values in each of these countries. We need a loving, friendly cooperative spirit and a direct approach to their minds and hearts to mobilize them against communism.

"Let us consider India. The Communists want India. If they conquer India the consequences are incalculable. The average Indian must have a reason for being against communism. What reason is significant to him? You cannot say it is against his economic well-being. His economic well-being is so low that it is difficult to make it any lower. You cannot say it is against his constitutional liberties. He does not quite understand what they are. It must be against something which, to him, is meaningful and significant. It must threaten something to him that is valuable. The Communists very cleverly deceive and hide their destructive program from each group, as they exploit their needs and conquer them."

The Communist movement, Dr. Schwarz declared, draws its strength from two principal sources. First, "their recruitment of the student intellectual who is susceptible to the appeals of communism by reason of his educational conditioning.

Second, the superb organization of the Communists.

The intellectual, he explained, "is recruited in terms of his ideological pride. He is more intelligent than the average man, and he sees the opportunity to mold man and create history.

Dr. Schwarz told the committee he believes that communism should be taught in the schools, "but I believe it should be taught with a moral directive, in the same way that a medical student is taught that cancer is evil, that tuberculosis is evil and education about them is directed to their elimination and defeat. I think the teaching of communism without a moral directive can be very dangerous. Teaching it with a moral directive should emphasize the basic foundations of American civilization, revealing the enemy threatening their destruction, the erroneous beliefs leading the Communists to undertake the destruction of freedom, the methods by which they propose to destroy, and what must be done to defeat them. If it is presented without moral direction, it appears simply as an alternative economic system with certain superior virtues. This has frequently been done in the past, and instead of opposing communism, it tends to recruit to communism."

INTERNATIONAL COMMUNISM

(The Communist Mind)

WEDNESDAY, MAY 29, 1957

UNITED STATES HOUSE OF REPRESENTATIVES,
COMMITTEE ON UN-AMERICAN ACTIVITIES,
Washington, D. C.

STAFF CONSULTATION

The following consultation by the staff of the Committee on Un-American Activities was held at 2:55 p. m., Wednesday, May 29, 1957, in room 226, Old House Office Building, Washington, D. C.

Staff members present: Richard Arens, director; William F. Heimlich, consultant; and Richard S. Weil, staff member.

Mr. ARENS. Dr. Schwarz, will you raise your right hand and be sworn by Mrs. Eduora Bernard, the notary public.

Mrs. BERNARD. Do you solemnly swear that the testimony you are about to give in this hearing will be the truth, the whole truth, and nothing but the truth, so help you God?

Dr. SCHWARZ. I do.

TESTIMONY OF DR. FREDERICK CHARLES SCHWARZ, EXECUTIVE DIRECTOR, CHRISTIAN ANTI-COMMUNIST CRUSADE

Mr. ARENS. Kindly identify yourself by name, residence, and occupation.

Dr. SCHWARZ. My name is Frederick Charles Schwarz, S-c-h-w-a-r-z. My official home address is 142 Concord Road, Concord, Sydney, New South Wales, Australia. My American address is Christian Anti-Communist Crusade, Box 890, Long Beach, Calif., and I am the executive director of the Christian Anti-Communist Crusade.

Mr. ARENS. Dr. Schwarz, on behalf of the staff of the Committee on Un-American Activities, I am happy to welcome you here for this staff consultation, which is pursuant to the overall policy of this committee in which we try to contact and make a record of statements of people who have had extensive experience and can shed some light on many of the facets of the world Communist conspiracy.

Would you kindly, for our record, give us a word about your own personal history and background?

Dr. SCHWARZ. I was born in Brisbane, Australia, on the 15th of January 1913. I was educated at the schools of Brisbane and I attended the University of Queensland, which is the northeastern state, of which Brisbane is the capital. At the university I studied, first,

92964—57——2

science. I graduated in science with major subjects mathematics and physics. I later graduated in arts in which I studied philosophy and political economy. After teaching school and being a lecturer in mathematics and science in the Queensland Teachers College, I graduated in medicine and surgery from the University of Queensland Medical School. Following graduation, I established a general medical practice in Sydney and, for a time, was psychiatrist for the Cathedral Marriage Guidance Clinic of Sydney and the New South Wales Community Hospital.

I am an evangelical Christian of Baptist denomination and have been a lay preacher for many years.

Mr. ARENS. Doctor, would you kindly tell us how you became interested in your work in the anti-Communist movement?

Dr. SCHWARZ. At the University of Queensland, in the late 1930's, I was active in the Inter Varsity Christian Fellowship while the Communists were also active at the university in the Labor Club. We entered into a dispute on the philosophical conflict between God and materialism. I had my first debate with a Communist in 1940 when I debated with Max Julius, a very prominent Communist, now a member of the Central Committee of the Australian Communist Party.

Following this debate my interest quickened, and I read profoundly of the Communist text of Marx, Lenin, and Stalin and challenged other Communists to debate. Over a period of years I was active in lecturing against communism and debating with Communists within Australia, with special emphasis on the philosophic conflict of God and the value of the individual, as against materialism and the individual's insignificance in relation to the state.

Most of my activities were confined to church and religious circles and conducted in association with my medical practice.

In 1950 I made my first trip abroad, visited in America, and returned to Australia. The response to the message was such, and the need such, that my medical practice is now closed; and I am on my sixth world tour and I am now executive director of the Christian Anti-Communist Crusade, which is active in America and Australia and indirectly in many other parts of the world.

Mr. ARENS. Thank you for that background information, Doctor.

May I pose this general question to you as a point of departure in your consultation with us today: How would you characterize or describe the ideology and morality of communism, and how, in your judgment, can that ideology and morality be countered or met in this world struggle?

Dr. SCHWARZ. The ideology of communism is applied Godless materialism. The problem that perplexes many people is the overwhelming appeal that communism apparently exercises for the student mind.

Mr. ARENS. What is the nature of that appeal, Doctor?

Dr. SCHWARZ. The nature of that appeal is a promise that the student can achieve two things by association with the Communist Party. He can participate in the conquest of the world and, following the conquest of the world, he can then participate in a program to change human nature, perfect human character, and populate the entire earth with a new quality of personality infinitely superior to any that history has ever known. The appeal that attracts the young student is almost a religious appeal that his life can be utilized for the regeneration of all mankind.

Mr. ARENS. Would you care to elaborate on that theme, Doctor?

Dr. SCHWARZ. When you ask the Communist a simple question: "How are you going to change human nature?" they would answer with one word, and that word is "science." "We are scientists. Science has changed the material world. Science has changed the world of agriculture. Science has changed the world of animal husbandry. We can use science to change human nature itself."

This sounds very appealing. You can understand how this sounds to a young student infatuated with the techniques of science. To participate in using science for its greatest achievement is a seductive vision.

However, to be scientific you must follow scientific laws, and communism then proceeds to give it three scientific laws. These laws are as follows:

The first one is "There is no God." They are proudly, unashamedly atheistic in theory and in practice. When they deny God, they simultaneously deny every virtue and every value that originates with God. They deny moral law. They deny absolute standards of truth and righteousness. An entire civilized code of moral and ethical values is destroyed so that they are free to erect in their place new moral and ethical standards as the occasion demands.

The second law of communism is that man is a material machine. He is matter in motion and nothing more. Man is a body, and he is completely describable in terms of the laws of chemistry and physics. Man has no soul, no spirit, no significant individual value, no continuity of life. He is entirely an evolutionary product, the specie Homo sapiens, and subject to modification, adaptation, and transformation by the applied, established laws of animal husbandry.

William Z. Foster, chairman of the American Communist Party, expresses it in his book, the Twilight of World Capitalism, which he wrote in 1949. In the last chapter, The Advent of the Socialist Man, he writes:

> Henceforth, the evolution of human species must be done artificially by the conscious action of man himself.

Their second law, therefore, is the material animal nature of man.

The third law of communism is economic determinism. It states that the qualities of human intelligence, personality, emotional and religious life merely reflect the economic environment; that in the last analysis what we think, what we feel, what we believe, whom we love, and whom we worship is simply an expression of the environment in which we are raised; and since that environment is primarily concerned with economic forces, in the final analysis, man is a determined economic being.

Mr. ARENS. I can hardly restrain myself at this point from posing this question, even at the risk of breaking the theme: If the Communists' major premise is correct, that you and I are not morally responsible, then why would the Communists in the same breath turn around and try to assess moral responsibility against what they describe as the capitalists?

Dr. SCHWARZ. In the final analysis they do not do that. They consider themselves as superior to the capitalist as the farmer is superior to his animal. Moral responsibility is not involved. They understand capitalist motivation as the automatic outcome of capitalist economics.

Since the root is evil the fruit must be so. It is their duty to destroy the root and frequently the fruit. The concept of his moral guilt does not enter into it any more than when a farmer destroys an animal giving a positive tuberculin reaction. You do not consider that animal morally responsible. He belongs to a certain class which, by reason of its association, has developed a certain potentially dangerous character, and no matter how splendid the animal, its destruction is obligatory.

Communism rests on a class concept. They believe the proletariat class is the progressive class of history and that the capitalist classes, the degenerate classes, are discarded by history and must be destroyed. To them this is the law of historical development. To argue on a bourgeois moral basis merely reflects degenerate class origin.

Economic determinism is the third law of communism.

Applying these laws, communism asserts that the environment of capitalism is a degenerative environment and it creates degenerate people. The responsibility for individual evil, for vice and crime, for selfishness and greed in all its manifestations is not that of the individual. It is the projection of the capitalist environment into the individual.

The Communist believes that if you are going to change the individual, if you are going to change mankind, it is foolish to think that you can do it while the degenerative capitalist environment exists. First, you must conquer the world and, having conquered the world, you must destroy the capitalist environment which is built on profit, selfishness, and greed. You must replace it by socialism which is built on service, cooperation, and unselfishness, so that from birth the experiences of the environment will build into the character unselfishness, cooperation, and service, and as these children mature to adolescents and adults everyone will work because they love to work; everyone will give because it is better to give than receive; the hand of no man will be raised in anger against his brother; there will no longer be any need for government and government will wither and die. There will be no need for a police force; there will be nothing for police to do. There will be no need for an income-tax department because everyone working, according to his natural impulses, gives of his best for the general well-being, and out of the abundance thus created retains only his own personal needs. Farewell anger, lust, and greed, envy, malice and strife, pestilence and war; enter golden, companionable, cooperative brotherhood; mankind will live together in the glorious day of communism that has dawned on the earth.

Mr. ARENS. Doctor, may I pose this question: How, to the Communist mind, is this world of goodness and of plenty and of unselfishness and love, consistent with the program which we see in effect in Communist regimes, a program of bloodshed, of deceit, of inhumanity, and the like?

Dr. SCHWARZ. It is the justification for it all. You see the goals. To sacrifice one or two generations is not a very big price to pay for such a glorious goal from their point of view.

The Communists are confronted with this problem: When they conquer the world, they are left with those people who have been brought up in the capitalist environment. They have had their experiences. It has formed their character and personality. Naturally,

if you leave the babies and the children with them, they will impress that character and personality upon them, so the Communists are confronted with a problem of what to do with the adults of established character and personality once they have conquered the world.

Being thoroughly materialist scientists, they do not hesitate. They say they have no alternative. Naturally, they must dispose of these classes. To them it is not murder. Murder is a bourgeois term which means killing individuals for bad reasons. They are going to kill classes for good reasons.

Mr. ARENS. Is it your theme, Doctor, that the practice of communism in the world is consistent with the theory of communism?

Dr. SCHWARZ. Exactly. Inherent within the theory of communism is the greatest program of murder, slaughter, and insanity conceivable.

Mr. ARENS. It is your theory that to the Communist mind the practice of communism and the theory of communism are coextensive, that they complement one another?

Dr. SCHWARZ. Exactly.

Mr. ARENS. What is your appraisal of the murder, deceit, and treachery which even the Communist regimes assess against Stalin?

Dr. SCHWARZ. To the Communists murder, treachery, and torture are frequently moral acts. They cannot regenerate human nature until they have destroyed the capitalist system. They cannot destroy the capitalist system until they have conquered the world.

Mr. ARENS. What would be the mental processes by which Khrushchev could condemn Stalin for murder?

Dr. SCHWARZ. He did not condemn him. He justified him. In his speech on Stalin, that is the most amazing feature. We say Khrushchev condemned him because we read his report on Stalin's incredible acts and mental attitudes. We pay no attention to Khrushchev's climax. He portrayed Stalin's acts which were the most fiendish, the most brutal, the most evil in the record of man. He shows Stalin as a multiple murderer. He shows him the murderer of millions. He shows him as sadistic and insane. He shows him personally dictating the torture of his own friends. He showed, for example, when the Jewish doctors were arrested and accused of poisoning Zhdanov, Stalin called in their interrogator and said, "If you don't get a confession, we will shorten you by a head." After he portrayed the whole macabre spectacle, he finished up with this statement, in effect: "Mind you, don't misunderstand. Stalin was a good man. He did these things as a Marxist-Leninist. He did these in the interest of the working class. He was no giddy despot."

He finished up with a moral justification of Stalin. That leads us to Communist morality. Morality is relative and related to the objective situation.

You cannot regenerate mankind until you have destroyed the capitalist world, and you cannot destroy capitalism until you have conquered the world. The process of world conquest involves waging successfully the class war. Within the present phase of the world struggle, at the heart of existence, there is this universal war. As Lenin stated, "Proletarian morality is determined by the exigencies of the class struggle."

Mr. ARENS. Could I interpose this question to perhaps clarify our record: Khrushchev, as we all know, had charge of the liquidation of

the Kulak class. About 10 million of his countrymen were liquidated, what we would call murder. A crime of such enormous scope that the average human mind could not begin to comprehend it. In your appraisal of the Communist philosophy and motivation in life, could Khrushchev, as a dedicated Communist, have a twinge of conscience about those murders?

Dr. SCHWARZ. None whatsoever.

Mr. ARENS. Why, Doctor?

Dr. SCHWARZ. Because these murders were in the interest of the advance of Communist power and world conquest and in the direction of history's will; therefore, they were moral and righteous acts. Any twinge of conscience would be a remnant of Khrushchev's bourgeois upbringing and a failure of his Communist personality.

Mr. ARENS. Could you give us a further word, Doctor, on this ideology of the Communists on the inevitability of communizing the world?

Dr. SCHWARZ. Yes, sir. Their basic theoretical concept derives not from Stalin, not from Lenin, but from Marx. The concept is the universality of class war. This is their theoretical concept. War is a state of being. War exists between the proletarian class, which is the future class of mankind, and the reactionary bourgeois class. The waging of this war is the great duty of all class-conscious proletarians; the future is the triumph of the proletarian class. The Communist Party is the brain of the proletarian class, and the war that manifests itself within a state is a conflict between the Communist Party and the state government until the Communist Party destroys and conquers that state. Once that is done, it manifests itself in the international realm in a state of war between those countries that have been conquered by the Communists and where their power is established and those countries as yet unconquered. The basis of Communist policy is the existence of the class war. To them it is a fact of being.

So within this framework every act which advances their triumph is righteous. Every statement that helps their cause is true.

Mr. ARENS. They overlooked the Christian philosophy.

Dr. SCHWARZ. They wiped it out entirely.

Mr. ARENS. The philosophy that the end never justifies the means.

Dr. SCHWARZ. The end creates the means. Any act, however brutal, and no matter how many people are killed, that advances the Communist conquest, is a peaceful act.

Within this framework of ideology and morality, no Communist can tell a lie in the interests of communism because by definition, if it is in the interest of communism, it is the truth. A person is only a material machine and truth is merely a set of electronic impulses that circulate within his brain. The ultimate truth is the will of the Communist Party. Every basic term that we use has been redefined by the Communists in terms of the class war. For example, as you well know, the word "peace" is one of the great words in the Communist vocabulary and most folks think they are hypocrites when they use the word "peace."

Mr. ARENS. Certain people in high places in government have professed that the Communist regime in Soviet Russia wants peace.

Dr. SCHWARZ. They do want it.

Mr. ARENS. What kind of peace do they want?

Dr. SCHWARZ. You have to understand that their basic concept is that class war is a fact of being and that peace is the historical synthesis when communism defeats the remainder of the world and establishes world Communist dictatorship, which is peace. If you ask a true Communist to take a lie detector test and ask him if he wants peace, he would pass it with ease. He would look at you with a light in his eye and say he longs for peace.

Mr. WEIL. Communist peace, not peace as we understand it.

Dr. SCHWARZ. Every act that contributes to the Communist conquest is a peaceful act. If they take a gun, they take a peaceful gun, containing a peaceful bullet, and kill you peacefully and put you in a peaceful grave. When the Chinese Communists murder millions, it is an act of peace. When the Russian tanks rolled into Budapest to butcher and destroy, it was glorious peace. Peace is wonderful and within their framework of ideology whatever helps their conquest is peaceful, good, and true.

Mr. WEIL. I would like to ask one question of you as a psychiatrist as well as an analyst of the Communist ideology. There comes a point when all this reevaluation and redefinition has progressed to a point where it is no longer reconcilable with reality, and even the Communists themselves must recognize this. Have they not reached that point?

Dr. SCHWARZ. I do not believe they have reached it. They have reached the point of insanity.

Mr. WEIL. You think Khrushchev still believes in the classic theories as you expounded them?

Dr. SCHWARZ. I believe that paranoia is at the heart of communism and that their theoretical concepts are far more convincing to them than the evidence of the facts. I believe, for example, that they, in their own mind, believe that the riots in Hungary were organized by the vicious American imperialists. There is this element of paranoic self-deception at the heart of communism. I do not think that they are just hypocrites; they have merged the techniques of hypocrisy with the virtues of sincerity, creating a very powerful instrument.

Mr. WEIL. Mass paranoia itself is a term which can be quite deceptive.

Dr. SCHWARZ. It is a powerful instrument. That insanity is manifest in the world hysteria they stirred up about the Rosenbergs. The Communists manifested their tremendous efficiency as agitators around the world on behalf of the Rosenbergs. The name "Rosenberg" became the best-known American name throughout the world. There were riots in many countries, and actually quite a number of people died in these riots on behalf of the Rosenbergs. Everywhere the Communists and their friends were heart stricken and desperately miserable because of the dreadful anti-Semitic conspiracy that was leading to this cruel persecution of these two poor Rosenbergs.

In the midst of it all, they suddenly arrested a lot of their own leading Jews in Czechoslovakia, men of position, power, and Communist character; and after a farce of a trial, which occupied about 2 weeks, they publicly executed them. The outsider looking on would say, "What sort of people are these? How hypocritical can you be?"

The two Rosenbergs had been given a fair trial. The trial was before a jury of their peers, conducted by an impartial judge. Appeals

were heard and every civil liberty granted that the fairest judicial system in the world can provide. In Czechoslovakia, these Jews were practically murdered after the most summary of judicial farces. What hypocrisy! You would expect the Communists to have at least some sense of guilt and inconsistency, but there was no manifestation of it whatsoever. If anything, their tears on behalf of the Rosenbergs flowed more freely. Their agony became more intense. To us they were utter hypocrites, but not to themselves. The execution of the Rosenbergs was an act that would retard Communist world conquest. Therefore, it was an evil act. Therefore, the Rosenbergs were guiltless. Therefore, the evidence against them was perjury. Therefore, those who gave the evidence were perjurers and criminals. Therefore, every progressive and moral proletarian heart must be emotionally disturbed because of this dreadful and evil act perpetrated with cruelty, brutality, and injustice. On the other hand, the arrest and execution of the Czechoslovak Jews would advance Communist world conquest; it would please the Arabs; it would set the stage for Communist influence in the Near East, which we see coming to fruition today.

It was an act in the interest of world conquest by communism; therefore, it was a good act. Therefore, they were guilty. Therefore, they were criminals. Therefore, the evidence against them was true. Therefore, every progressive heart must feel a sense of elation and rejoicing that justice triumphed with their death.

Mr. WEIL. I think the theory behind that is excellent. But the evidence we have today seems to point to the fact that the Communists wanted the Rosenbergs executed, as a matter of fact, because they felt the Rosenbergs alive might be witnesses against the Communist apparatus. That bears out the impression of hypocrisy.

Dr. SCHWARZ. There is nothing inconsistent in their moral framework of believing all that and wanting them executed at the same time. There is nothing inconsistent in that because each individual is merely an expendable animal; and if their dying is going to help the Communist cause, then it is a good act. They could want them executed and yet feel compassion for them and anger against their brutal executioners. We have established that inherent within Communist ideology and morality there is a program of murder, treachery, and brutality and that the theory of communism translates these acts into highly moral acts. The theory of communism destroys every basic moral value on which civilization, and particularly Christian civilization, is built.

Mr. ARENS. Doctor, is there some kind of analogy that could be made between what you are saying and what your experience must have been as a surgeon, namely, that a surgeon, as he undertakes to eliminate a cancerous cell or organism of the body, cuts into noncancerous material and does it feeling he is doing so on perfectly moral grounds because he is trying to save life? Is that the approach that you are saying that Communists have toward the ultimate goal of redemption of the world by communism, that they can take lives, innocent lives, because the overall objective is one of saving humanity?

Dr. SCHWARZ. The tragedy of communism is not simply that it murders, but it transforms murder into a moral and righteous act. When a person does evil and he is conscious he is doing evil, you have

a basis of approach; but when evil becomes good, you have no starting point, you have nothing about which to argue. The great evil rests in the philosophic, basic concepts of communism when it rejects God, when it materializes and bestializes man, and when it denies the inherent dignity and value of human personality and individuality. Upon that ruthless, amoral, materialistic basis it builds an edifice which destroys evermore every civilized, moral, ethical, and spiritual value.

Mr. ARENS. Before we get to the second side of your coin, you have told us, first of all, on the basis of your background experience and study, the ideology and morality of communism, and you propose to tell us, as I understand it, how to meet and defeat this ideology of communism.

Before we get to the second side of the coin, could I ask you a question or two, if you please, Doctor?

How do you account for the fact that this ideology of communism, which is contrary to all that you and I as Christians—and I say it in the broadest term—people who believe in God and believe in spiritual values, how do you account for the fact that this force called communism, evil as it is, unappealing as it is to those with any sense in them of goodness, is sweeping across the world with a speed that is hitherto unknown in the history of the world, that it now encompasses about one-third of the population of the world from a start of about 50 years ago? How do you account for that?

Dr. SCHWARZ. First, the reason is their recruitment of the student intellectual, who is susceptible to the appeals of communism by reason of his educational conditioning. He accepts that materialist foundation on which Communist ideology and morality is built. He is recruited in terms of his ideological pride. He is more intelligent than the average man, and he sees the opportunity to mold man and create history, whereas the dull, brutal driven herd sweeps on unaware of the forces that create it and drive it forward. He is one of the elite, the chosen, and the intellectual aristocracy. In combination with this intellectual pride, the religious nature of man demands a purpose in life; they find in this vision of human regeneration a religious refuge for their Godless hearts.

Second, there is their superb organization. The origin of effective communism came with totalitarian organization, the formation of the Bolshevik segment of the Russian Democratic Labor Party under Lenin. Communism illustrates the truth that the disciplined, dedicated, scientific, intelligent, and organized few will be able to exploit and direct, deceive, and conquer the selfish, undisciplined, disorganized multitudes. Communism is advancing in terms of its recruitment of students, the organization of these students into the Communist Party and the scientific exploitation of group needs, grievances and ambitions to advance their party to power. The goal of communism is conquest, not conversion. They convert a few and conquer the many.

Mr. ARENS. It is our information, Doctor, that there are in the world today approximately 25 million Communists. Is there any cohesive force that is opposing them?

Dr. SCHWARZ. Unfortunately, no.

Mr. ARENS. Is there any monolithic force of any comparable size?

Dr. SCHWARZ. Unfortunately, I know of none. I know of no monolithic, conscious, dedicated, directive force to oppose them. What is needed, and that brings us to a second point——

Mr. ARENS. I would like to ask you, before you get to your second point, if there is a fallacy in undertaking to appraise the strength of the world Communist movement in terms of numbers?

Dr. SCHWARZ. A very definite fallacy involved.

Mr. ARENS. Why?

Dr. SCHWARZ. Because it is trying to determine the validity of the hull of the boat by relating the area of the holes to the area which is sound. One hole can sink the ship. Communism is the theory of the disciplined few controlling and directing the rest. One person in a sensitive position can control, manipulate, and if necessary, destroy, thousands of others.

Mr. ARENS. To use this illustration of your boat, you need only one man to pilot the wheel.

Dr. SCHWARZ. That is right. If he wants to run it aground, the fact that the other thousand people want to keep it at sea has little bearing on the result. Lenin's slogan was fewer but better; the dedicated, disciplined, who will conquer and control the great multitude.

Mr. ARENS. Doctor, on the basis of your extensive study of communism, is it conceivable that we can negotiate ourselves out of the struggle, negotiate with the Soviets, the international Soviet operation?

Dr. SCHWARZ. To negotiate true peace with people who are utterly dedicated to the concept of the historical inevitability of class war and their victory is impossible. To think that we can do it is to indicate a failure to understand communism so completely that it approaches mental illness. To the Communist every negotiation is an act of war. Every delegation is an act of war. Every peace petition is an act of war. Every disarmament conference is an act of war.

Mr. ARENS. Could we trust them in negotiating with them in a disarmament conference?

Dr. SCHWARZ. As long as keeping their promise would advance their program of conquest, they could be trusted to keep it. The moment that keeping their promise hindered their program of world conquest, it would be their moral and righteous duty to break it. Actually, crazy as it sounds, to them, breaking their promise would be keeping it.

Mr. ARENS. Doctor, with this record reflecting your comments on the ideology and morality of communism, we would be very happy to have you proceed to give us your views on how the free world can meet and defeat the ideology of communism.

Dr. SCHWARZ. The first step of Communist conquest is the ideological conquest of the student mind. That is always the first step. Our first step should be the immunization of the student mind against that conquest by the Communists.

The Communists have never been able to make progress until they have been able to get these student intellectuals to be their standard bearers. This poses a problem both within and without the country. Within the country the educational system, the legislative system, the family, the religion, and all cultural influences should be so tuned that they build a mind and a character with an understanding of the

American heritage and moral values; a confidence in your constitutional system, your government by law, your economic systems of free competitive enterprise. Associated with this understanding, there should be a national patriotism that will immunize the youth against the very insidious Communist propaganda.

The first thing is to educate young people who believe in their God, their country, their family, their Constitution, their liberty under law and who are proud of their heritage. They then will not easily be swayed by Godless, materialistic concepts.

Mr. ARENS. May I pose a question at this point, Doctor: Have not the Communists even perverted these institutions, such as loyalty to Government, such as the true tenets and principles of the Constitution?

I know when this committee has hearings in which we subpena before us people who are identified under oath as hard-core members of the Communist conspiracy, they very cleverly attack the committee as though we are the ones out to destroy the Constitution, as though they are the ones who are defending the Constitution by invoking the fifth amendment; and they have a significant segment of the so-called liberals of the country who go right down the line with them.

Dr. SCHWARZ. Exactly. This is the paradox. Here are our very precious, cherished liberties that did not come about by accident, that are the envy and admiration of the rest of the world; here is a group of people, the Communists, openly dedicated to their total destruction and yet these Communists are able to take advantage of these very liberties and to hide behind these liberties for their purposes of destruction and to recruit as their "runners of interference" well meaning American citizens. This is the paradox that confronts us. The problem is, and I know this is a problem that confronts your committee all the time, how can we rout them out, expose and disarm them without doing damage to the constitutional system and liberty under law which are so cherished in America? I believe it can be done, it must be done; and it is being done.

Mr. ARENS. I would like to have you elaborate, if you please, sir, on the way in which, in your judgment, the ideology and morality of communism can be exposed for what it is, the fallacies of it actually exposed and how to actually meet it with a superior and more sound ideology.

Dr. SCHWARZ. I believe that the problem is largely an educational one, but it is also a spiritual one.

If I may say so, I think your committee has done a magnificent educational job. I do not know if that is the prime function of your committee, but you have certainly done a splendid educational job in revealing not only the theory but the actual practice and character of communism and Communists.

I believe that communism should be taught in the educational system, but I believe it should be taught with a moral directive, in the same way that a medical student is taught that cancer is evil, that tuberculosis is evil and education about them is directed to their elimination and defeat. I think the teaching of communism without a moral directive can be very dangerous. Teaching it with a moral directive, should emphasize the basic foundations of American civilization, revealing the enemy threatening their destruction, the erroneous beliefs

leading the Communists to undertake the destruction of freedom, the methods by which they propose to destroy, and what must be done to defeat them. If it is presented without moral direction, it appears simply as an alternative economic system with certain superior virtues. This has frequently been done in the past and instead of opposing communism, it tends to recruit to communism.

I believe there is a great problem before the American people: to provide education with a moral dynamic that reveals communism as a rationale of murder and lying and the destruction of freedom. It is totally immoral, and mental and emotional barriers against it should be erected in the minds of the young.

Then there is also the problem of what is to be done throughout the world, because communism is advancing by a pincers movement. It is advancing by internal deception, confusion, misrepresentation and weakening and external growth of power. They believe that by a combination of the internal confusion and degeneracy, in combination with the growth of the external threat, the final act of conflict can be consummated without war and their violence can follow later.

Mr. ARENS. Do you remember the quotation from Lenin on that, that they will encircle the United States and it will fall in the hands of the Communists like an overripened fruit?

Dr. SCHWARZ. That is their program. The tragedy of our approach to the Communist danger throughout the world is that it is almost entirely on a materialistic plane that we are trying to defeat them.

Here is the great paradox. The Communists profess themselves to be materialists, and we profess ourselves to be idealists and spiritual people. As a consequence of these beliefs, the Communists are winning the world by first winning the students ideologically, while we try to combat them by material means. Basically the program, at least if you look at it budgetwise, is about $40 billion approximately for military weapons, then about $3 billion to $4 billion for material assistance, and a tiny fragment for purposes of information, education, and spiritual warfare.

The paradox is this: Basically, much of our program to combat communism rests on a Marxist foundation. Marxism teaches that the ideas of the mind, as well as the emotions of the heart, emerge out of the material environment.

When we want people of the world to resist the Communist idea and to embrace the idea of freedom, we think that if we give them material benefits this will automatically come to pass, and so the idea is to give economic aid and military assistance in the expectation that communism will lose its appeal and freedom will triumph.

The foundation is wrong. Materialistic measures do not control the minds and the hearts of the people. This must be done in a more direct fashion. We need a scientific approach that will utilize the moral, cultural, and spiritual values in each of these countries. We need a loving, friendly, cooperative spirit and a direct approach to their minds and hearts to mobilize them against communism.

Let us consider India. The Communists want India. If they conquer India the consequences are incalculable. The average Indian must have a reason for being against communism. What reason is significant to him? You cannot say it is against his economic well-being. His economic well-being is so low that it is difficult to make it

any lower. You cannot say it is against his constitutional liberties. He does not quite understand what they are. It must be against something which to him is meaningful and significant, it must threaten something to him that is valuable. The Communists very cleverly deceive and hide their destructive program from each group as they exploit their needs and conquer them.

There are certain forces which, properly organized, will mobilize the people against communism. To the Indian his religious faith, whether it be Hindu, Moslem, or Christianity, is important. His family relationship is important. His moral code is important. His national aspirations are important. Communism is against all these things; but in its approach to the Indian, it appears to be favorable to them.

I am informed by Indians that the majority of Christians in India vote Communist. The reason they vote Communist is not because they approve of Communist theories, they haven't the faintest idea what they are. They vote Communist because the Communists sent a very fine young student to their village with glorious magazines showing them how much their life will be improved under communism.

Mr. WEIL. What do we do; send more magazines?

Dr. SCHWARZ. Not so fast. First the Communists had to win the student who takes the magazines. We need an ideological offensive. That is what I am trying to do. I am an evangelical Christian and there are evangelical Christians in India. We have a basis of fellowship. Communism threatens us both. By personal association and contact we can build the understanding of the Communist danger. We have the tools that can help them convey the message to other Christians and the Indian people. It is much better that they should do it. We can help them. Our material advantage can now be effectively used when dedicated freedom-loving people, encouraged by our love, equipped by our support, carry the message of the value of the individual and the spiritual heritage of man, interpreted in the light of their specific faith, motivated by the dynamic of their conviction, when they carry this message and the corollary of the Communist threat to their own nationals.

Mr. ARENS. On the basis of your worldwide tours, background and experience, what is your appraisal of the progress of internal communism as opposed to the forces of freedom at the present time?

Dr. SCHWARZ. I regret to say that, by every standard test, the Communists have been making terrifying progress; and they are winning and we are losing.

Also in regard to your question, I think that the following illustration may be significant: Recently, for the first time, I saw the mechanical brain, the Univac machine. The firm was quite a small firm and yet to them it was so important that they paid $1,000 a month rental for it. They explained to me its purpose: They fed into it the statistics of the past, and the machine analyzed them and then predicted future trends. These trends were so accurate that they formed the foundation for their policy.

I said to the president of the firm, "Let us feed in the statistics of Communist advances of the past 50 years and see what year the Univac predicts the Communists will conquer the world. Lenin established Bolshevikism with 17 supporters in 1903. He conquered Russia with 40,000 supporters in 1917, and today they have conquered more than

900 million." The president of the company said, "I am afraid to try it."

The Communists claim victory is certain for the following reasons: They say it is inevitable, because we are the product of our own environment which has created us so intellectually dishonest, so unwilling to face the evidence, so selfish, so greedy, and so intoxicated with entertainment that we will never have the honesty, the intelligence, the courage, or the dedication necessary to do what must be done if we are to survive.

Mr. WEIL. What must be done if we are to survive?

Dr. SCHWARZ. We must face honestly the gravity of the situation. We must give it priority in our thinking and in our actions. We must build a strong base of freedom-loving people articulate in their faith, in their love of country, in their love of God, in their love of home, and in their love of law, and we must rally the spiritual forces in the heart of man and recruit dedicated personnel to raise barriers against communism in every area of the world.

The fundamental foundation of opposition to communism is an informed public opinion and a dedicated public character. On these alone the necessary legislative, administrative, judicial, military, and economic and educational programs may be built.

We have to set to work urgently building the foundation for Communist defeat. Most of our present programs, such as the military program and economic program, are temporary measures which may hold back the flood for a short period and give us a little more time to find a permanent solution.

In conclusion may I say that assessing all the evidence on a worldwide scope the Communists' continuing advance is terrifying, and the possibility of the fulfillment of Khrushchev's boast, "We'll bury you," looms closer everyday.

Mr. WEIL. If the present rate of Communist advances continues, how long do you think it will be, in your analysis of world events, before the Communists take complete control of the world?

Dr. SCHWARZ. I think the Communists have more or less tentatively set the deadline for about the year 1973. Mao Tse-tung and Stalin in their last conference thought it would take 4 more 5-year plans, approximately 10 years for the conquest and consolidation of Asia, with the immediate threat to Africa and Europe, while the weakening, softening, and degeneration of America continues, and avoiding an atomic-hydrogen war, their conquest is contemplated about that time.

Mr. WEIL. You mean 10 years from now for the consolidation of Asia, and this program does not envision a hydrogen bomb war?

Dr. SCHWARZ. The basic Communist strategy in 1952 renounced the inevitability of world war III. World conquest without war, which is called coexistence, became their basic strategy. I would not be surprised that they would like some disarmament, as all they look to from military might is a stalemate. If they can reduce the armament burden and retain this stalemate, they will have more funds available for propaganda, and political and economic warfare.

Mr. ARENS. Thank you very much, Doctor. We deeply appreciate your contribution in this staff interrogation.

(Thereupon, at 4:15 p. m., Wednesday, May 29, 1957, the consultation was concluded.)

INDEX

INDIVIDUALS

	Page
Foster, William Z	3
Julius, Max	2
Khrushchev	5, 6
Lenin	9, 13
Mao, Tse-tung	14
Marx	6
Rosenberg (Ethel)	7, 8
Rosenberg (Julius)	7, 8
Schwarz, Frederick Charles	1–14 (testimony)
Stalin	5, 14
Zhdanov (Andrei)	5

ORGANIZATIONS

Christian Anti-Communist Crusade	1, 2
Communist Party, Australia, Central Committee	2
Russian (Social) Democratic Labor Party	9
Twilight of World Capitalism (book)	3

○

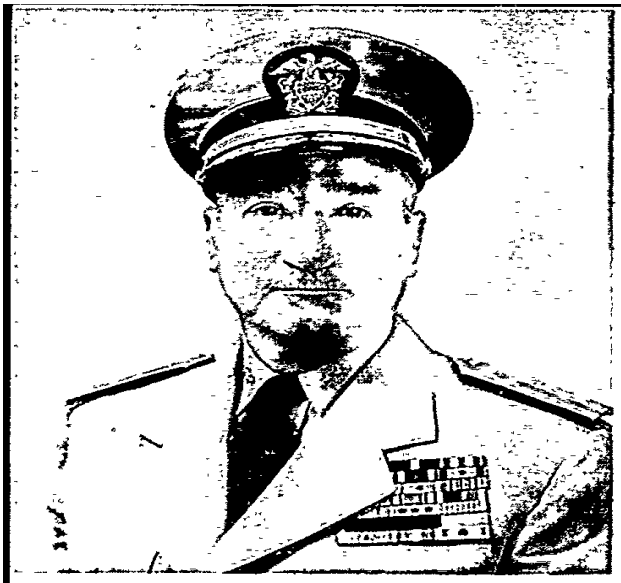
Seminar

ON

COMMUNIST TACTICS AND OBJECTIVES

23-24 July 1959

HEADQUARTERS EIGHTH NAVAL DISTRICT
U. S. NAVAL STATION
NEW ORLEANS, LOUISIANA



The age in which we live is fraught with tension and danger. A potential enemy lurks all around us. The ever-present threat posed by the Red Menace has made the free world sit up and take stock. It is precisely for this purpose that I am delighted to lend my support to this noteworthy Seminar.

From this meeting, I am confident will come a new and more profound understanding of our responsibilities as citizens of our great country. As members of the Armed Forces, we should strive at all times to obtain a clearer picture of our objectives in combating the problem of Communism, in these critical days.

May the hours we spend together bear fruit as we seek to probe this gigantic problem that confronts us all.

To each of you my best wishes, and my thanks for being here.

W. G. SCHINDLER
Rear Admiral, U. S. Navy
Commandant, Eighth Naval District

THURSDAY, 23 JULY

0830	Man Your Battle Stations	RADM W. G. SCHINDLER, USN
0900	Marxist Ideology	W. P. STRUBE, JR.
1000	COFFEE BREAK	
1015	Lenin's Program for World Conquest	W. P. STRUBE, JR.
1130 to 1300	LUNCH	
1300	The Communist Weapon of Allure	U. S. Army Film
1330	Communist Blueprint for Conquest of America	W. P. STRUBE, JR.
1430	COFFEE BREAK	
1445	Communist Blueprint for Conquest	U. S. Army Film
1515	Where Do We Stand in the Cold War?	W. P. STRUBE, JR.
1600	ADJOURNMENT	

As you think of questions, please write them down and sign your name before giving them to the speaker.

FRIDAY, 24 JULY

0830	Dead Men on Furlough	World Vision Film
0915	Communist Indoctrinal Procedures	W. P. STRUBE, JR.
1000	COFFEE BREAK	
1015	Defense Against Enemy Propaganda	U. S. Army Film
1045	The United States: A Constitutional Republic	W. P. STRUBE, JR.
1130 to 1300	LUNCH	
1300	The Structure of American Life	Harding College Film
1315	Security and Freedom	Harding College Film
1330	Communism in World Events	W. P. STRUBE, JR.
1430	COFFEE BREAK	
1445	What Can We Do?	W. P. STRUBE, JR.
1515	Responsibility of American Citizenship	Harding College Film
1600	ADJOURNMENT	

File No. 100-9450 serial 6! 105

Date Received 8/11/25

From _____
(Name of contributor)

(Address of contributor)

By _____
(Name of Special Agent)

To Be Returned Yes ()
No (X)

Description:

Booklet on
Parasitic Activity

TERRORISTIC ACTIVITY

Testimony of Dr. Frederick C. Schwarz

HEARINGS

BEFORE THE

SUBCOMMITTEE TO INVESTIGATE THE ADMINISTRATION OF THE INTERNAL SECURITY ACT AND OTHER INTERNAL SECURITY LAWS

OF THE

COMMITTEE ON THE JUDICIARY UNITED STATES SENATE

NINETY-THIRD CONGRESS

SECOND SESSION

PART 3

JULY 5, 1974

Printed for the use of the Committee on the Judiciary



U.S. GOVERNMENT PRINTING OFFICE

43-992 WASHINGTON : 1975

For sale by the Superintendent of Documents, U.S. Government Printing Office
Washington, D.C. 20402 - Price 40 cents
Stock Number 052-070-02724

COMMITTEE ON THE JUDICIARY

JAMES O. EASTLAND, Mississippi, *Chairman*

JOHN L. McCLELLAN, Arkansas
SAM J. ERVIN, JR., North Carolina [1]
PHILIP A. HART, Michigan
EDWARD M. KENNEDY, Massachusetts
BIRCH BAYH, Indiana
QUENTIN N. BURDICK, North Dakota
ROBERT C. BYRD, West Virginia
JOHN V. TUNNEY, California

ROMAN L. HRUSKA, Nebraska
HIRAM L. FONG, Hawaii
HUGH SCOTT, Pennsylvania
STROM THURMOND, South Carolina
MARLOW W. COOK, Kentucky [2]
CHARLES McC. MATHIAS, JR., Maryland
EDWARD J. GURNEY, Florida [1]

SUBCOMMITTEE TO INVESTIGATE THE ADMINISTRATION OF THE INTERNAL SECURITY ACT AND OTHER INTERNAL SECURITY LAWS

JAMES O. EASTLAND, Mississippi, *Chairman*

JOHN L. McCLELLAN, Arkansas
SAM J. ERVIN, JR., North Carolina [1]
BIRCH BAYH, Indiana

STROM THURMOND, South Carolina
MARLOW W. COOK, Kentucky [2]
EDWARD J. GURNEY, Florida [1]

J. G. SOURWINE, *Chief Counsel*
ALFONSO L. TARABOCHIA, *Chief Investigator*
MARY DOOLEY, *Acting Director of Research*

RESOLUTION

Resolved, by the Internal Security Subcommittee of the Senate Committee on the Judiciary, That the testimony of Dr. Frederick C. Schwarz, taken in executive session on July 5, 1974, be released from the injunction of secrecy, be printed and made public.

JAMES O. EASTLAND, *Chairman.*

Approved January 28, 1975.

[1] Resigned from U.S. Senate as of December 31, 1974.
[2] Resigned from U.S. Senate as of December 27, 1974.

TERRORISTIC ACTIVITY

FRIDAY, JULY 5, 1974

U.S. SENATE,
SUBCOMMITTEE TO INVESTIGATE THE
ADMINISTRATION OF THE INTERNAL SECURITY ACT
AND OTHER INTERNAL SECURITY LAWS
OF THE COMMITTEE ON THE JUDICIARY,
Washington, D.C.

The subcommittee met, pursuant to notice, at 10:40 a.m., in room 2300, Dirksen Senate Office Building, Senator Strom Thurmond presiding.

Also present: J. G. Sourwine, chief counsel; David Martin, senior analyst; Alfonso L. Tarabochia, chief investigator; and R. J. Short, senior investigator.

Senator THURMOND. Do you solemnly swear that the testimony you are to give in this hearing shall be the truth, the whole truth, and nothing but the truth, so help you God?

Dr. SCHWARZ. So help me God.

TESTIMONY OF DR. FREDERICK CHARLES SCHWARZ

Mr. SOURWINE. Sir, would you give the reporter your full name?

Dr. SCHWARZ. My full name is Frederick Charles Schwarz.

Mr. SOURWINE. And are you a long-time student of communism?

Dr. SCHWARZ. Yes; I have been studying communism for at least 34 years. I had my first debate with a Communist in the year 1940. My opponent was Max Julius, a member of the Central Committee of the Australian Communist Party. I have debated many Communists since. Many years ago I issued an open challenge to debate any Communist on any aspect of Communist doctrine or practice. I have studied communism consistently during the past 34 years.

Mr. SOURWINE. And you have been, over many years, a very active lecturer on this subject, have you not, and teacher?

Dr. SCHWARZ. I have been consistently lecturing, writing, teaching, and debating on the subject of communism. I have served as president of the Christian Anti-Communism Crusade and as director of numerous freedom seminars, antisubversive seminars, and anticommunism schools.

Mr. SOURWINE. Mr. Chairman, I believe that qualifies Dr. Schwarz as an expert in this area.

Senator THURMOND. He is an expert on communism.

Mr. SOURWINE. We are going to talk to him about that.

Senator THURMOND. That's fine.

Dr. SCHWARZ. I propose to explain the doctrines which transform normal, decent people into killers such as the members of the Symbionese Liberation Army; to explain why individuals like Willi Wolfe and Angela Atwood became urban guerrillas.

Senator THURMOND. Now, let me ask you, do you think Patricia Hearst is a member of that group now?

Dr. SCHWARZ. I am sure she is now.

Senator THURMOND. Do you think she was when they captured her?

Dr. SCHWARZ. No.

Senator THURMOND. You don't think so?

Dr. SCHWARZ. No, and I will tell you why.

Senator THURMOND. I wondered if all that screaming when they captured her was just put on; that she had made up her mind her life was dull; that she got tired of living with this boy and just wanted to do something different.

Dr. SCHWARZ. I don't think so. The Hearst Foundation offered $4 million to be distributed to people selected by radicals. If Patricia Hearst had been a member prior to her kidnaping, the logical thing would have been for her to have returned temporarily while the money was distributed and to have rejoined the group later. At that time there were no legal charges against her.

However, I think she may have been conditioned by her education and associations so that she felt guilty about her family wealth, and guilty about the privileged position America occupies in the world, and this may have made her susceptible to the arguments advanced by members of the Symbionese Liberation Army.

Senator THURMOND. You mean she was brainwashed?

Dr. SCHWARZ. I don't like to use the term "brainwashed" too loosely. I believe she was brainwashed after her kidnaping but not before. I use the term "brainwashing" to indicate an intellectual and emotional transformation which is brought about by the application of the forces of exhaustion, confusion, physical pain, and emotional tension. These produce a mental and emotional breakdown characterized by diminution of physical activity, fragmentation of memory, and deep depression. Release from pain and depression is obtained by believing the ideas of those who have administered the torture.

Consider the position of Patricia Hearst. She is suddenly seized and dragged screaming from her apartment. She watches her lover being physically attacked and her kidnapers firing guns at random down the street. She is thrown in the back of a covered van where she is tied up, blindfolded, and gagged. She, like any normal person, would be terrified. In acute discomfort and unable to sleep, it would not be long until she was exhausted and completely confused. She is constantly bombarded by the arguments of her captors who are completely convinced of their truth and who are prepared to die for what they believe. She knows that her death is probable and imminent, and she longs to live. A state of moral and emotional disorientation soon develops which is brought about by physical and mental exhaustion combined with pain and fear, and it is characterized by a deep and unbearable depression.

There is only one pathway to deliverance from her intolerable situation—that is complete intellectual and emotional surrender. She accepts the arguments as they have been presented to her. She renounces her former associations and standards, and lavishes love and affection upon her captors. She has become a new creature—born again.

Nothing less would solve her problem. Defiance would mean death. Pretending to join them would not relieve the unbearable mental and emotional anguish she was experiencing.

In this manner she was converted and became a genuine member of the Symbionese Liberation Army. It's typical of new converts that they are very enthusiastic so she is probably an enthusiastic member also.

Senator THURMOND. The leader of the crowd was killed, wasn't he?

Dr. SCHWARZ. It's doubtful that he was the real leader. In all probability the real leader was Bill Harris. The Symbionese Liberation Army followed the customary pattern of revolutionary movements. It was originated by intellectuals, and it endeavored to recruit activists into its service.

University students are relatively easily recruited into the revolutionary cause. However, they lack something as revolutionary activists. Their training has not conditioned them to kill and they tend to stop short of the act of wanton killing.

Consider the Weathermen. Their rhetoric is extreme and they have engaged in numerous bombings. However, they usually make a phone call and give warning before the bomb explodes so that the number of deaths has been minimal. It is easier to find conditioned killers among the inhabitants of the prisons and among the returned veterans. The revolutionary intellectuals went into the prisons to recruit their killers. The courts helped them by opening the prison doors to revolutionary literature and organizers. In prison they found Donald DeFreeze and presented him as the field marshal.

The Symbionese Liberation Army emerged from the radical movement of northern California. Many organizations in that area talked violence. Some individuals grew impatient because deeds did not match rhetoric. The Symbionese Liberation Army was a group that tried to make their deeds match their rhetoric.

Senator THURMOND. How many people do you think they have now?

Dr. SCHWARZ. I don't know the actual number, but I think it is small. One of the concepts of urban guerrilla warfare is to keep organizations small and independent so that when the members of one organization are captured, they cannot inform on other organizations because they do not have knowledge concerning them. There are probably a considerable number of individuals who have had contact with members of the Symbionese Liberation Army and who are sympathetic to it but who did not actually become members.

Senator THURMOND. It's a wonder some of them didn't squeal on them.

Dr. SCHWARZ. Some of those who have had contacts have informed the authorities of what they know but their knowledge is limited.

Senator THURMOND. Oh, they have?

Dr. SCHWARZ. I cannot prove this but I believe that as we are sitting here, there are at least 100 meetings in progress discussing how programs similar to those of the Symbionese Liberation Army can be carried out. These meetings would be held in homes, in college dormitories, in communes, in ghettos, and in all sorts of unlikely places. Those present at the meetings would be professed revolutionaries because of their belief that the United States is imperialistic, and they would be excited and inspired by the courageous example of the members of the Symbionese Liberation Army but would have no direct

links with it. The news media would be the vehicle through which they learned of the heroic deeds and thus the news media serves as the revolutionary recruiting mechanism. Violent revolutionary acts which are publicized by the news media are known as the propaganda of the deed.

The news media is cooperating magnificently. Bill Harris, Emily Harris, and Patricia Hearst produced a tape recording for propaganda purposes and sent it to Radio Station KPFK in Los Angeles. Within a few minutes it was broadcast across the Nation. The objective is to use the institutions of a free society to destroy freedom. The courts are used to open the doors so that prisoners can be recruited into revolutionary armies and the news media are used to publicize the deeds of one organization so that hundreds of similar organizations may be formed.

Senator THURMOND. Well, now, these groups are not connected, they don't know they exist.

Dr. SCHWARZ. No; usually they don't even know of the existence of other organizations.

Senator THURMOND. But it does inspire revolutions. Let me ask you this, now, Do you think the Communists are behind this in any way, or is it just the revolutionary nature in mankind that wants to do this?

Dr. SCHWARZ. The Communists provide the doctrine, many of the techniques of organization, and hope to be the final benefactors. Most, if not all, of the revolutionaries claim to be anti-imperialists. They are recruited by a doctrine which was first clearly expressed by Lenin in his book "Imperialism, the Highest Stage of Capitalism." This doctrine teaches them that the United States is an armed thief robbing and murdering the people in the poor countries of the world. Once they are convinced this is true, they believe that their duty is to destroy the United States. The doctrines that recruit them are primarily Communist doctrines.

Senator THURMOND. Do you think these leaders are connected with Communist leaders, or do you think they are just going on their own to be revolutionary?

Dr. SCHWARZ. Probably there are Communists among the urban guerrillas but many of them would deny that they are members of any Communist Party. Traditionally, communism teaches that the working class is essentially revolutionary and that the task of overthrowing capitalism will be achieved by a mass revolution led by the working class. The official Communist Parties still teach this. Numerous impatient revolutionaries have become disillusioned with the working class in the United States. They claim the workers have been bribed with the profits of imperialism so that they are no longer revolutionary. Since the working class will not rise in revolution, some other method must be found to destroy imperialist society.

Before the mass of the people will revolt, they must develop a revolutionary consciousness. The working class is not developing this consciousness in the present conditions that prevail. In order to develop this consciousness, they must experience oppression in a very real way. In a democratic society, the oppression is real but concealed so that the workers are unaware of it. Therefore, the democratic society must be destroyed and replaced by an authoritarian society which will make the people conscious of oppression. If sufficient urban

guerrilla bands can be formed and will engage in assassination, kidnapping, bombing, arson, bank robbery, and similar violent acts, the people will be afraid to move about the streets and will demand an authoritarian government to provide order. This popular demand will lead to the installation of some form of police state. This police state will deprive the people of cherished liberties and generate a revolutionary consciousness. In due course quarrels will develop among the authoritarian leadership and this will open the door to popular revolt. At this stage the Communists emerge and endeavor to lead the revolution and through it impose Communist dictatorship.

The breakdown of an authoritarian state leading to the emergence of a strongly organized Communist Party is illustrated by what has taken place in Portugal.

Senator THURMOND. Let me ask you: in Portugal, are they working with the Communists?

Dr. SCHWARZ. The leader of the Portugal Communist Party is a member of the government. The Minister of Labor is a Communist. The Communist Party is the best organized political party in Portgual and has infiltrated the army, the trade unions, the news media, women, and youth organizations.

Senator THURMOND. Was that takeover planned by real Communists, or was it revolutionary?

Dr. SCHWARZ. The Communists of Portugal have been working for years to overthrow the dictatorship that governed that country. The Communist Party has the ability to live underground in a fascist state whereas democratic parties do not possess this ability. The actual revolt in Portugal was probably not organized by the Communists but they were in a favored position to take advantage of the revolution when it occured.

Senator THURMOND. Is their headman a Communist?

Dr. SCHWARZ. No; Spinola is not a Communist but some claim he is a prisoner of the Communists and that they will dispose of him when the time is ripe. We need to remember what took place in Russia in 1917. In February of that year there was a mass revolution which granted freedom of action to the Communists. In November the Communists seized power and imposed their total dictatorship and have ruled Russia ever since.

Senator THURMOND. Go ahead.

Dr. SCHWARZ. Lenin had made a thorough study of the conditions that make revolution possible. He said that three conditions were necessary: (1) Mass discontent; (2) An organized, disciplined party to organize the revolution; and (3) A crisis within the existing government. When these three conditions exist simultaneously, a revolutionary situation exists.

Some modern Leninists believe that an authoritarian government is a necessary stepping stone to the Communist revolution. When such a government is formed, it robs the people of their personal liberty and generates discontent. Almost inevitably, quarrels between the leaders develop. In these conditions a great opportunity is presented to the organized Communist party which has been preparing to promote revolution.

Senator THURMOND. What do you think is the greatest threat to this country today?

Dr. SCHWARZ. From the long range viewpoint, the doctrine of imperialism, which is taught in many schools and which recruits many idealistic youth into the revolutionary army. The revolution is made more likely when, in the name of civil liberties, the powers of the security agencies are so restricted that they are unable to control the subversive organizations.

Senator THURMOND. That is one of the things I am concerned about now. The Congress is demanding to know and make public everything the FBI and the CIA do.

Dr. SCHWARZ. It is possible through a devotion to civil liberties to create conditions in which urban guerrillas flourish. If the security agencies created by the democratic state are unable to control them and to provide security for the people, there is a demand for an authoritarian society. In the name of civil liberties, the doors of the prisons have been open to Communist and revolutionary literature. Many revolutionary organizations are being formed among the prisoners.

Senator THURMOND. Why is this allowed?

Dr. SCHWARZ. The courts have forced the doors open. They have done so in the name of extending liberty.

Senator THURMOND. That's the trouble.

Mr. SOURWINE. One of the reasons, Senator, forgive me, this is in the area of my competency, is the fact that the Communists have concentrated on this particular area of the law and have a "board of experts," so to speak. They take these cases into various areas around the country, and can make it tough for a local U.S. attorney who has not specialized in such cases. The Justice Department has disbanded its Internal Security Division.

That leaves some U.S. attorney who knows little or nothing about communism except what he comes up on in 2 weeks to fight a team that has been maneuvering in this area, and imaginatively putting together a program, for 30 years.

Senator THURMOND. And why have they abolished internal security?

Mr. SOURWINE. Perhaps it was popular, sir, to abolish it. They also abolished the Attorney General's list of subversive organizations.

Senator THURMOND. And why did they do that?

Mr. SOURWINE. I think the reason was that it was obsolete.

Senator THURMOND. I was surprised——

Mr. SOURWINE. It is a long story, Senator, and I am afraid that what I say here may oversimplify it. This subcommittee, as you know, recommended 12 or 14 years ago that they either abolish this list or update it and provide additional information. Since that time we have brought it up, officially or unofficially, every time we had a change of Attorney General; and we haven't had one, until General Saxbe, that wanted to either step in there and bring it up to date, and provide the basic information about listed organizations, or to abolish the list outright. So the situation has just hung in limbo.

Senator THURMOND. All right.

Dr. SCHWARZ. The press is strangely silent about Communist involvement in agitation for civil liberties. For example, the press is featuring the recent rally in Charlotte, N.C., as a big rally for civil rights and against the death penalty. The word communism is not even mentioned but the facts are as follows: the Communist Party,

U.S.A., formed an organization called, The National Coalition Against Political and Racial Oppression, under the chairmanship of Angela Davis. The official sponsoring committee contains 20 Communists. They have been successful in recruiting many non-Communists to serve on the committee also. This coalition sponsored a rally in North Carolina to protest the death penalty and 5,000 attended. In all the reports I have read, it is merely described as a civil rights rally and the role of the Communist party received no mention. However, the Communist newspaper, The Daily World, has been promoting this rally for some considerable time.

Senator THURMOND. If the press did their job, they would tell who Angela Davis is, what she stands for, and how the organization was formed.

Dr. SCHWARZ. It is significant news that she is a member of the politburo of the Communist Party, U.S.A., and that the organization of which she is chairman, The National Coalition Against Political and Racial Oppression, was created by the Communist Party.

Senator THURMOND. Do you think the Communist Party should be allowed to operate here?

Dr. SCHWARZ. It is difficult to answer that by a simple yes or no.

Senator THURMOND. I don't think we should allow any party to operate that advocates overthrowing the Government by force.

Dr. SCHWARZ. The problem is to design laws which are constitutional and which will prevent the activities of the Communist Party. It is easy to outlaw the use of the name "Communist" but the Communists attempt to carry on their activities using some other name. I saw this happen in Australia. During the early days of the Second World War, Nazi Germany and the Soviet Union were allies. The Australian Communist Party was doing everything it could to help the Nazis by hindering the Australian war effort. The Australian Government, which at that time was a labor socialist government, outlawed the Australian Communist Party. At that time the party conducted a big rally in the Sydney Domain each Sunday. The leader was a well-known Communist labor union leader, Stan Moran. When the Communist Party was outlawed, he abolished the Communist meeting and commenced the people s meeting. He continued to conduct the people's meeting until the ban on the Communist Party was lifted when he once more called it a Communist Party rally. All that the Australian law achieved was to outlaw the use of the word Communist. It had very little affect upon their activities. If the Communist Party is outlawed, the laws should be written so that the activities of the party are stopped. This is not easy to do.

Senator THURMOND. Certainly not in the Congress as it is constituted today.

Mr. SOURWINE. Senator, we tried. Congress outlawed that party as far as they thought they constitutionally could, and the courts tore it down.

Senator THURMOND. That's right. I don't believe you could outlaw the party today. There are people over here who call themselves liberals, who are accomplishing Communist goals.

Dr. SCHWARZ. Lenin used the expression "Building communism with non-Communist hands". The genius of communism is that they are often successful in getting 100 people to work for them uncon-

sciously for every one who is a conscious servant. They recognize that a large number of people share a certain emotion such as opposition to capital punishment or devotion to civil liberties. They then form an organization to oppose capital punishment or to promote civil liberties. They enlist many non-Communists into these organizations. However, the Communists are careful to keep control of these organizations in their hands so they can use them for Communist purposes. Communists call this the scientific utilization of social forces.

Senator THURMOND. It would be better if the newspapers didn't publish anything about the activities of urban guerrillas since their acts inspire others. However, they have a duty to publish the news. How would you reconcile that?

Dr. SCHWARZ. From time to time the newspapers do make agreements to refrain from giving publicity to certain causes. I was informed that the newspapers agreed more than 20 years ago not to publicize the activities of Gerald L. K. Smith. He organized the Christian Nationalist Crusade and has a strong anti-Jewish emphasis. I believe the lack of publicity handicapped his work greatly.

Senator THURMOND. They destroyed him and his organization in that way.

Dr. SCHWARZ. Consider the shoot-out between the Symbionese Liberation Army and the police that took place in Los Angeles. The news media did not publicize all that was taking place. I was in Long Beach, less than 20 miles away, and I listened to the reports on radio and watched the events on TV. At the conclusion, the reporter said, "Now, we can tell you something we did not feel we should report before. Gangs of young blacks have been gathering around the periphery of the shoot-out and they were starting to throw stones and bottles at the police and firemen." If the siege had continued into the night, it is possible, if not probable, that there could have been a major riot.

The press has given that little publicity.

Mr. SOURWINE. I think Ed Montgomery wrote the story.

Dr. SCHWARZ. However, the press played it down. The press constantly selects the news they publish. If they believe a story will help a group they oppose, that story receives minimal or no coverage. If they believe it will help a group of which they approve, the story is featured. A process of selection goes on constantly. Is it too much to ask that those people who are engaged in the violent destruction of our society should not be presented as heroes? The press should not allow itself to be used as the recuiting mechanism for revolutionaries.

Senator THURMOND. The Washington Post never mentions my name unless it is unfavorable. Recently they published an article about my family. It was principally about my wife and children and included photos and that type of thing. However, in the middle they included a statement about what a sorry Senator I am. They used my wife and children to get people to read the article and then dig at me.

Dr. SCHWARZ. Selection is an essential element in the presentation of the news. It is a rare newsman who can keep his personal prejudices out of the selective process.

Senator THURMOND. You have done a great job. Keep up the great work.

Dr. SCHWARZ. Thank you, sir.

[Discussion off the record.]

Mr. SOURWINE. Dr. Schwarz, you recently wrote a letter in which you said—quote—"Kidnaping, assassination, and random murder are now becoming popular features in American life. This has not happened accidentally, but as a result of careful planning. The plans were formulated by Communists and collaborators with Communists."—unquote.

Would you tell us in your own words what you know about this?

Dr. SCHWARZ. Urban guerrilla warfare has recently become prominent within the life of the United States. The most recent major manifestation of this was the conduct of the Symbionese Liberation Army which was characterized by murder, kidnaping, arson, and bank robbery and which culminated in the violent conflict in Los Angeles in which six members of the Symbionese Liberation Army were killed.

The soldiers of the Symbionese Liberation Army were carrying out programs described in the "Minimanual of the Urban Guerrilla" which was written by Carlos Marighella of Brazil. This minimanual was translated into English and published by Communist Cuba. It is the textbook which most modern urban guerrilla movements use. However, Marighella did not initiate the science of urban guerrilla warfare. He was influenced by General Alberto Bayo who was a military leader on the republican side of the Spanish Civil War. When the republican forces were defeated, he went to Latin America where he became an instructor in the theory and practice of urban guerrilla warfare for the Communist revolutionaries.

Within the spectrum of Marxist-Leninist movements in this hemisphere, there has been considerable controversy concerning the most effective pathway to power. Mao Tse-tung advocates rural guerrilla warfare and many revolutionaries follow him. Castro conquered Cuba through rural guerrilla warfare. However, Che Guevara tried to conquer Bolivia and then South America through rural guerrilla warfare and he failed.

Urban guerrilla warfare is an alternative to rural guerrilla warfare. It believes the guerrillas should be based in the cities and not in the country and that they should engage in terroristic acts of violence which become the propaganda of the deed.

Mr. SOURWINE. When you refer to "careful planning" which as you say, "brought about kidnaping, assassination, random murder," whose planning? What planning? Where?

Dr. SCHWARZ. I would like to answer that question under five headings: (1) Recruitment, (2) Organization, (3) Program, (4) Objective, (5) Assisting forces.

RECRUITMENT

Most of the guerrillas are recruited from college students. The first step that leads them towards recruitment is that they are taught and that they believe the doctrine of imperialism. If this doctrine is true, their consequent conduct can be considered humanitarian.

Mr. SOURWINE. Weren't at least half of the members of the so-called Symbionese Liberation Army college graduates?

Dr. SCHWARZ. Of the six who were killed, I believe five were college graduates. Of the three known members who remain alive, two are college graduates and the third, Patricia Hearst, was a college student.

The doctrine of imperialism is the most powerful force to recruit college students and graduates into the revolutionary ranks. The doctrine of imperialism is the ideological serum which transforms the gentle, courteous, humane student, Dr. Jekyll, into the malevolent and homicidal revolutionary, Mr. Hyde.

The principal source for the doctrine of imperialism is "Imperialism, the Highest Stage of Capitalism," by Lenin. This book is presently, I believe, the world's most influential book. It is creating revolutionary enemies of the United States all around the world. The doctrine of imperialism may be summarized somewhat inadequately as follows:

Capitalism is a diseased social system. The germ that causes the disease is profit which Karl Marx called the surplus value of labor. Profit accumulates and becomes capital. Accumulated capital is owned by progressively fewer people so that it becomes monopoly capital. Monopoly capital finally becomes finance capital which is owned by banks and utilized by industries.

Finance capital is the indicted agent of imperialist theft. In order to invest finance capital profitably, a proportion of it is exported to underdeveloped countries where it pays the workers starvation wages, extracts agricultural and mineral wealth and transports them as raw materials to the mother country, primarily the United States. In the mother country, these raw materials are processed and transformed into industrial commodities which are sold at an enormous profit. It is not unusual for the finished product to be sold back to the country from which the raw materials were extracted. By this process, the industrially advanced or mother country robs the underdeveloped country of its wealth. It follows that the investment of foreign capital in an underdeveloped country is a technique of theft and impoverishment.

A portion of the enormous profits of imperialism is distributed to the workers in the mother country thus granting them a standard of living much higher than that of workers in the rest of the world. This transforms them into a workers aristocracy and hinders the formation of their revolutionary consciousness.

Investments in underdeveloped countries must be protected. This is the role of diplomacy, foreign policy, and, in the last resort, military force. This accounts for the numerous military bases the United States maintains throughout the world. It also accounts for most of the wars in which the United States has been involved.

Thus the doctrine of imperialism teaches that prosperity in the United States is the result of theft and murder carried out in the underdeveloped countries of the world. One example of the influence this doctrine exerts is provided by the Weathermen who became urban guerrillas engaged in violent activities such as bombing and arson. They originated in America's leading universities such as Harvard, Columbia, Michigan, and California at Berkeley. Most of those who joined the Weathermen had been outstanding students and came from very wealthy homes. In the basic Weatherman document, "You Don't Need a Weatherman to Show Which Way the Wind Blows," their acceptance of the doctrine of imperialism is expressed in these words:

> We are within the heartland of a worldwide monster, a country so rich from its worldwide plunder that even the crumbs doled out to the enslaved masses within its borders provide for material existence very much above the conditions

of the masses of people of the world. The US empire, as a worldwide system, channels wealth, based upon the labor and resources of the rest of the world, into the United States. The relative affluence existing in the United States is directly dependent upon the labor and natural resources of the Vietnamese, the Angolans, the Bolivians and the rest of the peoples of the Third World. All of the United Airlines Astrojets, all of the Holiday Inns, all of Hertz's automobiles, your television set, car and wardrobe already belong, to a large degree to the people of the rest of the world.

Those who became Weathermen believed this so sincerely that they became articulate and active enemies of their own country and dedicated their lives to the violent overthrow of the capitalist system. They felt they must engage in criminal activity.

To many American citizens this Weatherman statement appears ridiculous. Unfortunately, it does not appear ridiculous to many university students. Recently I traveled by bus from New York to Philadelphia. A student from the University of Pennsylvania sat beside me. We discussed revolutionary activity on the university campus, and he gave no indication of being a radical. However, I quoted the above Weatherman description of the United States of America and, his reply startled me: "What's wrong with that?"

The mighty propaganda apparatus of the world Communist movement focuses upon the teaching of the doctrine of imperialism. Unfortunately most of their accusations are not answered in the classroom.

Here is the May 1974, edition of the World Marxist Review which is classified as the "theoretical and information journal of Communist and Worker's Parties." It expresses the doctrines of the Communist parties of the world which support the Soviet Union and is published in the following languages: Arabic, Bulgarian, Czech, Danish, Finnish, French, German, Greek, Hungarian, Italian, Japanese, Mongolian, Norwegian, Persian, Portuguese, Rumanian, Russian, Singhalese, Spanish, Swedish, Turkish, and Vietnamese.

A major article in this edition is entitled "Indictment of Imperialism." The opening statement is, "The crimes of imperialism are growing and so is the bill presented to it by the peoples of the world." The article then proceeds to list the alleged crimes of imperialism and covers 20 pages in so doing. The influence of unanswered charges such as these upon susceptible student minds can't be exaggerated.

When an idealistic 20-year-old student is convinced that his native country is the enemy of the people of the world and the primary cause of poverty, oppression, and war, he feels a responsibility to destroy the system which prevails. At this point certain options are open to him.

One option is to join one of the orthodox Communist parties which are functioning within the United States. These parties affirm the doctrine of imperialism and teach that world peace and prosperity can be achieved only through the revolutionary overthrow of capitalism within America. The members of these parties are disciplined and are required to study. Their work to promote revolution is under the direction of senior Communists. These believe revolution must come through the activities of masses of people and not through individual terrorism. These parties include the Communist Party, U.S.A., which supports the Soviet Union, the Socialist Worker's Party which is the Trotskyist Communist Party, the Progressive Labor Party which is independent, and a host of smaller groups

such as the Revolutionary Union which supports the Chinese Communists and the policies of Mao Tse-tung.

A second option is to join one of the groups which follow the teaching of men such as Herbert Marcuse. Marcuse teaches that the American state, which he calls the welfare through warfare state, can be overthrown by adopting a new attitude toward the human body. The body should be treated as an instrument of pleasure rather than labor. Anything unpleasant should be renounced while anything pleasurable should be indulged. If this principle is followed, the work ethic is scorned and a major portion of time is spent in sexual and other indulgences. This results in society being deenergized and weakened. The family and political institutions degenerate so that the state cannot withstand the encircling Communist might.

The name I have selected for this teaching is political sensualism. Groups practicing it include undisciplined groups such as the yippies, zippies, and a considerable number of the hippies.

The third option is urban guerrilla warfare. This concentrates on immediate courageous, desperate action and appeals to certain impatient youth who desire activity, excitement, and immediate results.

A national organization to promote urban guerrilla warfare may be formed but this is unnecessary. A few people can form an urban guerrilla unit and operate independently. They are linked to other groups ideologically but not organizationally. They follow the general principles of urban guerrilla warfare such as those laid down in the Minimanual of the Urban Guerrilla but they do not report to any central authority. When such a unit is formed from a group of personal friends, it is very difficult for the authorities to infiltrate it. If the members of such a group are captured, they are unable to inform on anyone outside their own group. If one unit is destroyed, the publicity given to the destruction may stimulate the birth of numerous similar units.

PROGRAM

The program of the urban guerrillas consists of (1) murder, (2) kidnaping, (3) bombing, (4) arson, (5) bank robbery. Their program is, of course, not limited to these activities but usually includes them.

1. Murder. The murder or assassination may be either discriminate or indiscriminate. Selective individuals may be killed for a variety of reasons. A leader of the government or police force may be killed to set an example and to terrorize the opposition. If the individual is selected carefully, this may gain the support of the groups which hate him. Killing thus becomes a recruiting mechanism. It can also be used as punishment for those who desert the organization or oppose the leadership.

Indiscriminate killing tends to terrorize the general population and create demands for more effective police power to establish law and order. If the community becomes sufficiently terrorized, it may demand punitive action which shortcuts the due process of law. This is a step toward the creation of a police state.

2. Kidnaping. Kidnaping may be used in order to obtain large sums for ransom or it may be used to secure new recruits. While the kidnaping of Patricia Hearst does not appear to have been designed for the purpose of securing a new recruit, this was the ultimate result.

Various urban guerrilla organizations in South America have used the tactic of kidnaping for ransom very effectively. American corporations have paid enormous ransoms to secure the release of kidnaped executive personnel.

3. Bombing. The bombing may be directed against property, people, or both. Weathermen selected the various properties of the Bank of America as a primary target for their bombing. They did this to emphasize the role finance capital, which is owned by banks, plays in the alleged exploitation and pauperization of the underdeveloped countries of the world. This bombing was designed to harass the enemy and to make a doctrinal point rather than to kill.

4. Arson. The property of the capitalist enemy is vulnerable and arson is one of the most effective ways to destroy it. It is one of the crimes most difficult to prevent and it is also difficult to capture and punish the arsonists.

5. Bank Robbery. Even dedicated revolutionaries require food, clothing, and transportation; and this requires money. When they are cut off from their families and other legitimate sources of income, the robbery of banks is one method by which funds can be secured. According to their revolutionary moral code, robbing banks is virtuous.

When these programs are carried out, they generate great publicity and every attempt is made to publicize the ideas, doctrines, and objectives of the perpetrators. Those who sympathize with the doctrines and objectives of the guerrillas, classify their actions as political protest rather than criminal conduct. If the guerrillas are caught, tried, and imprisoned, they are frequently classified as political prisoners rather than criminals.

This type of violent activity makes a strong impression on the public mind and is called armed propaganda. Such activity breeds new similar activity.

Mr. SOURWINE. If I may interrupt, sir, do you think it would be useful at this point to put into the record the 14 action models, to use his words, which Marighella set the urban guerrillas to carry out?

Dr. SCHWARZ. I think that would be excellent. The 14 action models are:

(a) Assaults.
(b) Raids and penetrations.
(c) Occupations.
(d) Ambush.
(e) Street tactics.
(f) Strikes and work interruptions.
(g) Desertions, diversions, seizures, expropriations of arms, ammunition, explosives.
(h) Liberation of prisoners.
(i) Executions.
(j) Kidnapings.
(k) Sabotage.
(l) Terrorism.
(m) Armed propaganda.
(n) War of nerves.

THE OBJECTIVE

Most of these small urban guerrilla organizations do not believe that they are powerful enough to destroy the capitalist state and create a socialist state. However, they do believe that together they can create such chaos and fear that the continuation of a democratic

society will be impossible. Their immediate objective is the destruction of democratic free society. Any authoritarian society is preferable, including military and fascist dictatorships. The people must be made aware of their oppression. Their theoreticians affirm that the people are oppressed in a democratic society but for some peculiar reasons they are unaware of their oppression. The majority are convinced that they can improve their economic and social well-being and progressively eliminate injustice and poverty through the democratic system with its general elections and due process of law. As a result of this, the people do not acquire a revolutionary consciousness and do not become revolutionaries.

A number of reasons are given to rationalize the failure of the workers to become revolutionaries. One of these is that the workers have been bribed by the profits of imperialism and another is that their consciousness has been changed in the wrong direction by the products of the consumer society. Workers have become so attached to their automobiles, refrigerators, washing machines, color television, and the ownership of their own homes that they have developed a vested interest in the maintenance of the corrupt system and have become conservative.

Summarized, the argument goes something like this: A revolution is imperative to destroy the welfare through warfare state.

There can be no successful revolution without a large number of people developing a revolutionary consciousness.

A democratic free society inhibits the development of a revolutionary consciousness.

The democratic society must be destroyed and replaced by an authoritarian society.

Once an authoritarian society is established, people become aware of their oppression. Freedom is like breath. While you have it, you are usually unconscious of it. Once you lack it, the hunger for it becomes all-consuming. Once the people feel the oppression of authority on their own flesh, they will generate a revolutionary consciousness.

Most authoritarian societies have a limited life expectancy. Sooner or later the ruling group loses its cohesion and quarrels break out among the leaders. At this point, the institutions of authority become paralyzed and revolution becomes possible.

If the revolution is to prove successful, it requires leadership. This presents the Communist party with an historic opportunity.

Communist parties can function and live underground and retain remarkable vitality and strength. This is not true of democratic parties. Their members are accustomed to obeying the law and are not skilled in the techniques of secrecy and deception essential for underground operation. Consequently democratic parties disintegrate and die in a dictatorial regime.

When revolution breaks out, Communist parties have individuals ready to assume the leadership role. Their organization remains intact. Overnight, Communist magazines and newspapers appear as if by magic. Individuals suddenly announce their membership in the Communist party and assume leadership roles. They attempt to influence and control labor organizations, women's organizations, youth organizations, and cultural groups. Sometimes they succeed. The

present situation in Portugal provides an example. Thus the objective of the urban guerrilla warrior is the destruction of democratic free society.

This was explained by Ted Gold, one of the leaders of the Weathermen, in their general conference. He said, "Well, if it will take fascism, we'll have to have fascism." (Guardian, January 10, 1970.)

ASSISTING FORCES

The students who become urban guerrillas are aware of their limitations and realize they must have the assistance of individuals, groups, and institutions within our free society if they are to succeed in their objective of destroying free society. One problem is that urban guerrillas should be able to kill without inhibitions and their background and past experiences have not prepared students adequately for this role. Typical college students have not been trained for killing and retain inhibitions against the taking of human life. This limitation has apparently handicapped the Weathermen so that their activities do not fully match their rhetoric. For example, Bernardine Dohrn, one of the Weatherman leaders, eulogized the Manson gang who killed Sharon Tate and many others and presented them as models to be emulated. Her precise words were: "Dig it, first they killed those pigs, then they ate dinner in the same room with them, they even shoved a fork into a victim's stomach! Wild!" (Guardian, January 10, 1970.)

However, in practice, the Weathermen do not appear to have been able to match the indifference to human life of those they praised. They seemed to have killed almost as many of themselves as of those whom they consider the imperialist enemy. They have planted hundreds of bombs but their custom has been to call the authorities and give adequate warning time so that casualites have been minimal.

The best places to seek psychologically conditioned killers is among the inhabitants of the prisons and among the returned veterans. Many of the prisoners have already killed and their environment has made them callous towards taking human life. The same thing applies to certain veterans. If such conditioned killers can be recruited into the revolutionary ranks of the urban guerrillas, they will not hesitate to shed blood, innocent or otherwise.

The role of the prisoners as the military arm of the revolution was expressed by the convict, George Jackson, who was killed on August 21, 1971, while trying to escape from San Quentin prison. In an interview published in the "Black Panther" of August 29, 1971, George Jackson said:

> I'll reiterate that I feel that the building of revolutionary consciousness of the prisoner class is paramount in the overall development of a hard left revolutionary cadre. Of course, the revolution has to be carried by the masses. But we need a cadre; we need a bodyguard; a political worker needs a bodyguard. We see ourselves as performing that function. The terms of existence here in the joint conditions the brothers for that type of work. Although I have become more political recently, from listening to Comrade Newton, and from reading the Party paper, I've gained a clearer understanding of the tie-in between political and military activities. I still see my function as military.

Realizing the potential that exists in the prisons, the revolutionaries have been seeking to recruit prisoners into their ranks. Their task has been made much easier by court decisions. The courts have ruled that

the prisoners are entitled to receive Marxist and other revolutionary literature. Consequently, such literature is circulating widely in the prisons. Letters from prisoners are frequently published in revolutionary periodicals such as the Daily World, the Guardian, and the Militant. Revolutionary organizations are flourishing within the prisons.

Personal recruitment takes place as the revolutionaries gain access to the prisoners. Some of the revolutionaries operate as lawyers and others as cultural and rehabilitative workers.

The founders of the Symbionese Liberation Army made a special effort to recruit prisoners. They had some success. Their field marshal, Donald DeFreeze, who called himself Cinque, was recruited while he was a prisoner and he later escaped. There were a number of other black prisoners who were apparently attracted to the Symbionese Liberation Army and there was a temporary impression that their role in that army was greater than it was. However, Cinque appears to have been the only permanent black member, and he was killed along with five white members who were originally students.

The doctrine of imperialism depicts the colored races as the primary victims of American capitalism. This is extended to include the minorities within the United States, particularly the black minority. They are regarded as the natural enemies of the U.S. Government and the attempt is made to harness their anger and use if for murderous acts.

The Symbionese Liberation Army also recruited from the returned veterans. The first public act of the Symbionese Liberation Army was to assassinate Marcus Foster, the black superintendent of schools of Oakland, Calif., with cyanide-impregnated bullets. Two men have been arrested and charged with this murder. Both are returned veterans and were formerly members of the organization known as "Vietnamese Veterans Against the War."

A deliberate attempt is being made to recruit prisoners and veterans as soldiers in the urban guerrilla army.

Mr. SOURWINE. Doctor, may I intrude? I wanted to ask you if you are taking issue with Marighella's statement about the suitability of students for guerrilla warfare. Let me read a brief paragraph:

> Students are being noted for being politically crude and coarse, and thus they break all the taboos. When they are integrated into urban guerrilla warfare as is now occurring on a wide scale, they show a special talent for revolutionary violence, and soon acquire a high level of political, technical, military skill. Students have plenty of free time on their hands; and because they are systematically separated, suspended and expelled from schools by the dictatorship, and so they begin to spend their time advantageously in behalf of revolution.

Dr. SCHWARZ. I would agree with that statement in general terms. However, in the United States, the students have been very effective as revolutionary agitators but not so effective as revolutionary killers. Others adapt more easily to that role, and the student leaders seem to be aware of this and seek to recruit them. The revolutionary doctrines to which these students give their allegiance also teach them that they must recruit from the revolutionary masses.

The Symbionese Liberation Army is the most ruthless and brutal organization that has yet made its appearance on the American scene. Their deeds have matched or surpassed their words.

The name "Symbionese" is an adaptation of the word "symbiosis." Symbiosis describes two organisms living together in mutual benefit. They formed the army as a symbiosis of students, criminals, and returned veterans. There were, however, other aspects to this symbiosis. It also applied to different racial groups living together in cooperative harmony.

To return to the question of students and violence: In Palo Alto, Calif., an organization was formed called Venceremos and it professed dedication to the use of violence to destroy the American economic and social systems. Members would engage in certain violent acts. However, Venceremos broke up because some members believed that it was not living up to its words. There was too much talk and too little action. Some of the members, who desired more violence, graduated into the ranks of the Symbionese Liberation Army where there was violence aplenty.

The results obtained from court decisions and legislative acts do not always coincide with the wishes of those who initiate the court actions or promote the legislation. To increase civil liberties for all American citizens is a most desirable goal. To increase civil liberties of the prisoners in the jails seems a worthy part of this goal. To grant the prisoners access to literature and to open the prison doors to religious and cultural rehabilitative workers seems an advance for the cause of civil liberties.

When this results, however, in the recruitment of violent revolutionaries who engage in murder, kidnaping, arson, bombing and bank robbery in order to destroy the democratic society, there is an alarming diminution in civil liberties! Marcus Foster lost all his civil liberties very suddenly. This is a dilemma which civil liberty groups and courts should keep in mind.

Mr. SOURWINE. Isn't it true, from a strategic standpoint, that the Communists themselves and most of the groups, including terrorist groups, that follow this line of destroying imperialism actually move along three separate lines:

1. To weaken, discredit and destroy the government itself as such.

2. To change, weaken and destroy the political system, democracy and all that goes with it; and

3. To weaken and destroy the economic system?

Dr. SCHWARZ. Yes.

Mr. SOURWINE. Not only in this country, but in every country they attack?

Dr. SCHWARZ. As a general principle that is right. However, the Communists design programs in each country in the light of conditions that prevail in that country. They have great flexibility and in order to recruit supporters, they identify themselves with causes which have many supporters. Their program is expressed by the formula, "Find out what people want, promise it to them, go to work to get it for them so that you can come to power over them." The mainstream Communists are very patient.

The urban guerrillas can be regarded as a Communist fringe group or sect. They combine many of the doctrines of communism with some of the practices of anarchism. They don't give priority to study, organization, discipline and mass action. They take it for granted that

the American economic, political, and governmental systems are utterly evil and that any means to destroy them is legitimate. They engage in armed propaganda or the propaganda of the deed. They depend upon the news media to publicize their deeds and win recruits for their cause. The success of their program rests upon the cooperation given by the news media. To date the revolutionaries have no cause for complaint.

Freud teaches that every human being is the possessor of aggressive tendencies derived from the death instinct. In some individuals this tendency to aggression is dominant. Such individuals will become excited by the press accounts of the brutal acts of the revolutionaries and will be recruited for the cause. To the urban guerrilla, the violent deed is a recruiting act.

I believe a little history may be appropriate at this point. The role of violence has been a subject of intense discussion since Karl Marx made his statement that "force is the midwife to deliver the infant socialism from the womb of an aging and decaying capitalism."

There has been general agreement about the need and virtue of violence but considerable disagreement concerning the type of violence that should be used. The official Communist line on violence was given by Lenin. He stated that when a revolution was not imminent nor in progress, violence should be limited to the actions of a mass of people. He taught that individual terroristic acts were counterproductive. The main task of the Communist was to organize and agitate the masses. If the Communist engaged in acts of violence which compelled him to hide underground from the police, he severed his links with the masses. For this reason, individual terrorism was, in general, condemned.

From this, it would appear that the urban guerrillas are in conflict with the teaching of Lenin. Nevertheless, many of them claim to be Marxist-Leninists. How do they justify their apparent departure from Lenin?

They have little difficulty. They say that one of the basic tenets of Leninism is that techniques must change when conditions change. The teachings of Lenin were appropriate for the conditions that prevailed in his day.

Despite this, during his lifetime, Lenin organized and approved many acts of individual violence. For example, he organized violent bank robberies which were carried out by the Bolsheviks in Caucasia under the direction of Stalin.

The urban guerrillas claim that if Lenin were alive today, his attitude toward violence would change completely. In his day, if a public leader were assassinated, the only people who knew about it immediately were those close at hand. The news took weeks and even months to reach the entire nation.

Today, with radio, television, and wire services, an act is known all around the world within minutes. Millions of people actually watched the conflict between the members of the Symbionese Liberation Army and the police while it was taking place. I listened to it on radio from its inception and watched it on television during most of the action.

Due to these changed circumstances, the propaganda of the deed is 1,000 times as effective as it was in Lenin's day. Such revolutionary violence can therefore be considered Leninist.

If one group is wiped out, the record of their deeds lives on so the members of the group can continue to recruit revolutionaries even after their death. There is little comfort to be derived from the fact that the Symbionese Liberation Army was almost wiped out during the shootout with the Los Angeles police. I cannot prove it, but I am convinced that the day after that debacle, at least 100 meetings took place during which potential urban guerrillas discussed how they could conduct programs similar to those of the SLA. These meetings were probably held in a variety of environments such as college dormitories, ghetto apartments, communes, and even penthouses.

Many, if not most, of these meetings will not lead to overt acts, but sometimes they do. As long as there are susceptible youth poisoned by the doctrine of imperialism so that they believe the American system must be overthrown; as long as there are angry, aggressive personalities which can be stimulated by reports of violent deeds; and as long as there are radio, television, and newspaper reporters willing to glamorize the participants in revolutionary violence, new urban guerrilla movements will continue to be born.

I am stressing, but not overstressing, the role played by the news media. Somewhere a balance must be struck between the virtue of providing information and the vice of revolutionary recruitment. This involves both the manner and the timing of the presentation of the news. The revolutionaries do not own the news media, but they act as though they did. They prepare and record on tape speeches with the full confidence that they will be broadcast as soon as they are received by the selected radio station. For example, when the surviving members of the SLA—Bill Harris, Emily Harris, and Patricia Hearst—produced a war communique and sent it to radio station KPFK, it was broadcast, obscenity and all, within minutes of its reception.

Thus, among the groups and forces assisting the urban guerrillas, we must include:

1. Portions and policies of the news media.
2. Certain court decisions.
3. Some civil libertarian individuals and organizations.
4. Teachers of the doctrine of imperialism.

PROSPECTS OF SUCCESS

The urban guerrillas are not tilting at windmills. They have definite prospects of success in their war to destroy democratic society. If confronted with the choice between security and liberty, it is probable that a majority of people will choose security even if this means the surrender of cherished democratic liberties.

Recently in the San Francisco Bay area there were numerous random and apparently motiveless murders of white people by young blacks. Many people were afraid to walk the streets and there was a public demand that strong action should be taken.

Although San Francisco is one of the most liberal cities in the United States, an official policy was formulated to stop, question, and search every black man on the street who fitted the profile of the killers. Civil libertarians protested that this was an infringement of the civil liberties of many innocent people as indeed it was.

The program to stop, question and search was discontinued, partially because of the protests, but also because the police believed they had discovered the perpetrators of the murders and their motives. If the killings had continued and increased and the police had not been able to stop the murders by normal methods, it is probable that drastic action would have been demanded and taken.

When people fear for their lives, there is a spontaneous demand for a strong leader and a real threat to the continuance of democracy. The urban guerrillas of Uruguay, the Tupamaros, were unable to conquer that country but they successfully destroyed democracy. Only recently, Uruguay was known as the democratic jewel of Latin America. The people enjoyed the freedoms of democracy and the benefits of a welfare state. A Marxist-Leninist urban guerrilla movement, known as the Tupamaros, was formed and it commenced an efficient program of kidnaping, assassination, bank robbery, arson, and bombing. Their activities inspired the Weathermen in the United States. The democratic government proved unable to prevent the activities of these urban guerrillas. In the crisis thus created by the Tupamaros, the military seized power. The new rulers dealt successfully with the Tupamaros but they also abolished the free operation of the institutions through which personal liberty is expressed. Political parties and trade unions are restricted and the military rules.

To this extent the Tupamaros have been successful. This is the scenario proposed for the United States.

PREVENTIVE ACTION

A number of steps can be legitimately taken to prevent both the recruitment and the functioning of urban guerrillas:

1. The falsity of the doctrine of imperialism should be exposed: This can be done either by a thorough examination of the argument as it is presented by Lenin or by drawing attention to the prevalent facts in the international realm which contradict the conclusions of the doctrine.

The essence of the doctrine of imperialism is that the investment of capital in an underdeveloped country is a technique of theft which impoverishes the country in which the investment is made.

This conclusion is reached theoretically by concentrating on the things that are extracted from a country through foreign investment and ignoring the things that are added. Foreign investment often increases the real wealth of a country by providing homes, transportation, skilled personnel and money through taxation for education, medical care, et cetera. The numerous advantages that can and often do accompany the investment of foreign capital must be balanced against the resources that are removed.

Foreign investment is like fire. It can be destructive or it can be immensely creative. By concentrating solely upon the havoc and destruction that fire has caused through the ages, an argument could be developed that fire is the great enemy of human well-being. However, controlled fire has added immensely to human comfort and well being.

The wealth of the Arab oil-producing states is a definitive answer to the doctrine of imperialism. The development of their oil industries

has been due to foreign investment through which the oil was discovered, the wells were drilled, the pipelines constructed, the refineries built. If the doctrine of imperialism were true, the states in which these investments were made should be impoverished. The truth is that they are incredibly wealthy.

The doctrine of imperialism presents false conclusions which are reached by selecting certain facts and building a logical system upon them while other facts are ignored. It is the perversion of the half-truth.

However, it is often presented in a logical and appealing package and convinces students who have limited experience, logical minds, and a resentment because poverty and injustice are allowed to continue to exist in the world.

The doctrine of imperialism can and should be demolished intellectually. This would eliminate genuine idealists from the revolutionary ranks.

2. Laws must be written which are adequate to prevent violent revolutionary activity: Freedom can only exist in a society of laws. Every law restricts a freedom. Thus we have the paradox that the restraint of freedom is essential to the life of freedom.

This paradox is caused by the fact that in society freedoms conflict. The exercise of freedom by one individual to smoke often denies other people the freedom to breathe air uncontaminated by carcinogenic toxins. It is only recently that this conflict of freedoms has been acknowledged and laws have been written to deny individuals the freedom to smoke in certain places For example, on aircraft an area is set aside where smoking is prohibited.

The hope is that the limitation of certain freedoms will result in the maximization of freedom for all.

The objective of legislation is not to grant unfettered freedom, but to maximize general freedom.

The activity of urban guerrillas threatens to destroy the liberty of all. It is legitimate that laws should be written to minimize the possibility of recruitment in prisons, et cetera. Is it impossible to design laws which will prevent revolutionary literature and agitators from recruiting prisoners as soldiers in the army of destruction? The transformation of prisoners into urban guerrillas is dubious rehabilitation.

The press serves society. It, too, should be subject to the law. No institution should be above the law.

3. The peace forces, such as the police, must be strong enough to cope with the urban guerrillas: This is not merely a matter of providing them with adequate physical weapons such as guns. They should also be trained so that they can understand the appeal exercised by communism and associated doctrines as well as the techniques used by the communists and other revolutionaries. I would go so far as to advise that police forces should be given a course in communist theory and practice to arm them ideologically as well as physically. In order to know what individuals and groups are likely to do, it is essential to know their pattern of thinking and laws of operation. An educational course should be designed to meet this specific need.

Some will doubtless make the charge that by writing laws to restrict certain types of individual conduct and by strengthening the police, we are embracing communist methods in order to fight communism. While there is certainly a danger that this may happen, there is no necessity that it must happen. One of the fundamental differences between communism and democracy is that in a communist society the communist party is supreme while in a democracy, the law is supreme.

Under communism, law is the servant of the government. In democracy it is the master.

Communism teaches that a successful revolution must lead to the establishment of the Dictatorship of the Proletariat. Lenin defined the dictatorship of the proletariat as "the rule, based on force and unrestricted by law, of the proletariat over the bourgeoisie."

The Communist Party administers the dictatorship of the proletariat, therefore, by definition, the law does not restrict the actions of the communist party. It is above the law.

It is true that some time ago the Communist rulers of Russia announced that in the Soviet Union, the dictatorship of the proletariat had been replaced by the state of all the people. However, this difference in terminology has not produced any difference in conduct. The Communist Party continues to exercise absolute and final authority within the Soviet Union and the law is a tool by which it exercises this authority.

The role of the law is quite different in a free society. It is acknowledged that there are certain absolute values of justice and truth which many believe derive from the being and nature of God. The law is an expression of these values and the law limits the freedom of activity of the government. There are certain things which the government must not do. Government, unrestrained by law, is tyranny.

The important thing is that restraints on individual liberty necessary for the functioning of a free society should be specified by law and not left to the arbitrary whim of some individual. This applies whether that individual is president, policeman, professor, journalist civil libertarian, or an urban guerrilla. All are susceptible to restraint by law. The responsibility for writing adequate laws is that of a freely elected legislature operating under constitutional restraints.

Mr. SOURWINE. Thank you very much, Doctor.

Dr. SCHWARZ. Thank you.

Senator THURMOND. Thank you very much for a very interesting presentation. The committee will stand in recess subject to the call of the Chair.

[Whereupon, at 12:10 p.m., the subcommittee was recessed, subject to the call of the Chair.]

Reprinted by the Christian Anti-Communism Crusade

For additional copies, write to:

Christian Anti-Communism Crusade
124 East First Street
P.O. Box 890
Long Beach, California 90801

INDEX

(NOTE.—The Senate Internal Security Subcommittee attaches no significance to the mere fact of the appearance of the name of an individual or organization in this index.)

A

Page

Atwood, Angela ---- 156
Australia ---- 161

B

Bank of America ---- 167
Bayo, Gen. Alberto ---- 163
Black Panther (publication) ---- 169
Bolivia ---- 163
Bolsheviks ---- 172
Brazil ---- 163

C

California ---- 157
California, University of (at Berkeley) ---- 164
Castro ---- 163
Caucasia ---- 172
Central Intelligence Agency (CIA) ---- 160
Charlotte, N.C ---- 160
Christian Anti-Communism Crusade ---- 155
Christian Nationalist Crusade ---- 162
Columbia University ---- 164
Communist Party ---- 158, 159, 161, 168, 176
 Australian ---- 155, 161
 Central Committee ---- 155
 Portugal ---- 159
 U.S.A ---- 160, 161, 165
Cuba ---- 163

D

Daily World, The (newspaper) ---- 161, 170
Davis, Angela ---- 161
DeFreeze, Donald (Cinque) ---- 157, 170
Dohrn, Bernardine ---- 169
Domain, Sidney ---- 161

F

Federal Bureau of Investigation (FBI) ---- 160
Foster, Marcus ---- 170, 171

G

Germany ---- 161
Gold, Ted ---- 169
Guardian (publication) ---- 169, 170
Guevara, Che ---- 163

H

Harris, Bill ---- 157, 158, 173
Harris, Emily ---- 158, 173
Harvard ---- 164
Hearst Foundation ---- 156
Hearst, Patricia ---- 156, 158, 163, 166, 173

I

Page
"Imperialism, the Highest Stage of Capitalism" (book)---------- 158, 164

J

Jackson, George---------- 169
Julius, Max---------- 155
Justice Department---------- 160

L

Latin America---------- 163, 174
Lenin---------- 158, 159, 161, 164, 172, 174, 176
Long Beach---------- 162
Los Angeles---------- 158, 162, 163
Police---------- 173

M

Manson gang---------- 169
Mao Tse-tung---------- 163, 166
Marcuse, Herbert---------- 166
Marighella, Carlos---------- 163, 170
Martin, David---------- 155
Marx, Karl---------- 164, 172
Marxist-Leninist movements---------- 163
Marxist-Leninists---------- 172, 174
Michigan, University of---------- 164
Militant (publication)---------- 170
"Minimanual of the Urban Guerrilla" (book)---------- 163, 166
Montgomery, Ed---------- 162
Moran, Stan---------- 161

N

National Coalition Against Political and Racial Oppression, The---------- 161
Newton---------- 169
North Carolina---------- 161

O

Oakland, Calif---------- 170

P

Palo Alto, Calif---------- 171
Pennsylvania, University of---------- 165
Portugal---------- 159, 169
Progressive Labor Party---------- 165

R

Radio Station KPFK---------- 158, 173
Revolutionary Union---------- 166
Russia---------- 159

S

San Francisco---------- 173
Bay area---------- 173
San Quentin Prison---------- 169
Saxbe---------- 160
Schwarz, Dr. Frederick Charles, testimony of---------- 155–176
Short, R. J---------- 155
Smith, Gerald L. K---------- 162
Socialist Workers' Party---------- 165
South America---------- 163, 167
Sourwine, J. G---------- 155–176
Soviet Union---------- 161, 165, 176
Spanish Civil War---------- 163
Spinola---------- 159
Stalin---------- 172
Symbionese Liberation Army (SLA)---------- 156, 157, 162, 163, 170–173

T

Page

Tarabochia, Alfonso L---- 155
Tate, Sharon---- 169
Thurmond, Senator Strom---- 155–176
Third World---- 165
Trotskyist Communist Party---- 165

U

United States---- 158, 163–165, 170, 173, 174
Uruguay---- 174
Venceremos---- 171
Vietnamese Veterans Against the War---- 170

W

Washington Post (newspaper)---- 162
Weathermen---- 157, 164, 165, 167, 169, 174
Wolfe, Willi---- 156
World Marxist Review (magazine)---- 165
World War II---- 161

Y

"You Don't Need a Weatherman to Show Which Way the Wind Blows" (statement)---- 164

FD-340 REV. (6-14-77)

Field File No. 100-9540-1A6

00 and File No.

Date Received 2/2/79

From The Houston Post
(NAME OF CONTRIBUTOR)

(ADDRESS OF CONTRIBUTOR)
Houston, Texas
(CITY AND STATE)

By
(NAME OF SPECIAL AGENT)

To Be Returned ☐ Yes ☑ No

Receipt Given ☐ Yes ☑ No

Description:

Full page ad by
W.P. Strube Jr re:
Visit of Vice Premier
Teng Hsiao-Ping

100-9540-1A6

Paid Advertisement

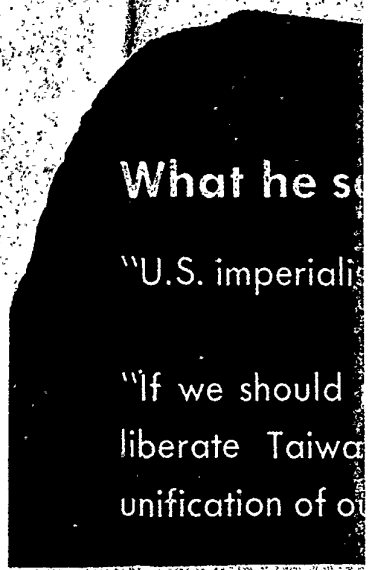
Introducing Houston's Guest

Teng Hsiao-ping

What he has done . . .

For over 50 years Teng has played an active. . .role in the Communist Party in China. He is a symbol of torture and mass murder to millions of innocent victims. Since 1975, he was directly responsible for directing the Cambodian activities which saw over 1 million persons slaughtered. His involvement included the years when we suffered the loss of 100,000 American servicemen in Korea and Vietnam.

Now our President, after breaking our pledge to 17 million free Chinese on Taiwan, is bringing Vice Premier Teng to America to honor him. Taxpayers' money is being used to welcome a tyrant who has the worst human rights record in the history of the world. Our State Department has reserved . . . rooms in the Hyatt Regency Hotel at your expense.



What he s

"U.S. imperiali

"If we should
liberate Taiwa
unification of o

STANDARD FORM NO. 64

Office Memorandum • UNITED STATES GOVERNMENT

TO : SAC (100-0) DATE: 10/6/58

FROM : SA FREDERICK C. FEHL

SUBJECT: ANTI-COMMUNISM CRUSADE
SM - C

On 10/2/58 CHARLES STEINBERGER advised he is presently assiting WILLIAM STRUBE in connection with the captioned matter.

STEINBERGER specifically desired a representative of the Bureau to speak at one of the committee meetings concerning communism, and in addition indicated he would like the Houston office to furnish him pamphlets and publications concerning communism.

STEINBERGER was informed that the Bureau does not furnish speakers to discuss communism as well as the fact the Bureau possesses no pamphlets or publications relative to this matter. He was instructed that should he desire to obtain data concerning subversive organizations he should communicate with the Attorney General, Subversive Control Section.

FCF:mec
(1)

100-9540-2

SAC, HOUSTON (100-8975) 11/14/58

SA LEWIS W. DISHONGH

BEN LEVY
SECURITY MATTER (C)

On 11/13/58 ACOP GEORGE SEBER (NA), HOPD advised that on 11/12/58 Mr. GEORGE S. HOGAN, Administrative Assistant to COP CARL SHUPTRINE, received a telephone call from Mr. RAYMOND HOO, Chinese Consul, Houston.

Mr. HOO advised that he had declined an invitation from BEN LEVY to participate in a debate on the subject of "Recognition of Red China", to take place at the First Unitarian Church, 5200 block of Fannin, Houston, on 11/21/58 at about 8:00 PM. The debate will be preceded by a pot luck supper at the Church to start at about 6:30 PM.

Mr. HOO stated that he had participated in such a debate previously and "was not impressed by the actions of the opposing orator or the audience". The nature and time of this debate was not given.

HOO stated that his side of the debate will be represented by Mr. WILLIAM STRUBE Jr., of the "Christian Crusaders".

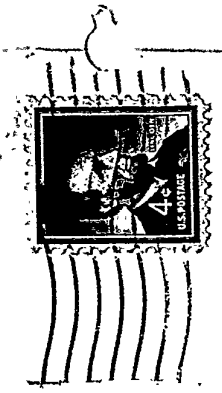
HOO stated that he believed the "whole project has a 'pink' smell" and its main purpose is to win the audience of the church to the recognition of Red China.

Above is submitted for record purposes.

2 - Houston
1 - 100-8975 (BENJAMIN G LEVY)
1 - 100-9540 (W.P. STRUBE)

100-9540-3

SEARCHED INDEXED
SERIALIZED FILED
NOV 14 1958
FBI - HOUSTON



3520 Ave. L
Galveston, Texas
March 31, 1959

F. B. I.
Post Office Bldg.
Galveston, Texas

Dear Sirs;

I would very much to have a report on an organization, if it is possible. It's name is Christian Anti-Communism Crusade with headquarters in Long Beach, California and a branch office in Houston.

Several friends and myself are forming a study group more or less under their direction and we want to make absolutely certain it's what we think it is before we get too involved.

Thank you so much.

Sincerely,

Mrs. J.J. Carlson Jr.

Mrs. J.J.Carlson, Jr.
3520 Ave. L
Galveston, Texas
Phone So.3-3057

100-9540-4
62-0-9143

Carls
3520
Galv
Texa

SEARCHED INDEXED
SERIALIZED FILED
APR 3 1959
FBI - HOUSTON

500 Federal Office Building
Houston 2, Texas
April 3, 1959

Mrs. J. J. Carlson, Jr.
3520 Avenue L
Galveston, Texas

Dear Mrs. Carlson:

I am in receipt of your letter dated March 31, 1959, wherein you make inquiry concerning the "Christian Anti-Communism Crusade."

For your information, the data contained in the files of the FBI is confidential and I am sure you will appreciate the fact that it is not possible to furnish you information concerning this or any other organization.

This letter is not intended to imply that this office does or does not have any information concerning the matter of your inquiry.

It is suggested you might desire to communicate with the Americanism Committee of the American Legion, Indianapolis, Indiana, who might possibly be able to furnish you such information.

Assuring you of my desire to cooperate in all matters of a mutual interest, I remain,

Very truly yours,

H. O. HAWKINS
Special Agent in Charge

1 - Addressee
1 - Houston (62-0)

HOH:ahf
(2)

100-954-5
62-0-9143 A

STANDARD FORM NO. 64

Office Memorandum • UNITED STATES GOVERNMENT

TO : SAC, HOUSTON

DATE: 5/18/59

FROM : SAC, EL PASO (62-dead)

SUBJECT: ANTI-COMMUNIST CRUSADE
MISC. - INFORMATION CONCERNING

For the information of the Houston Office, an article and photograph appeared in the Odessa American newspaper on May 10, 1959 on page 35, indicating that on May 9, 1959, a one day school sponsored by about 25 Odessa citizens had been held in Odessa, Texas. Mr. W. P. STRUBE, JR. of Houston, Secretary of the Anti-Communist Crusade spoke to an audience of about 150 preachers, teachers, club women, students and businessmen according to the article.

100-9540

The above is for your information as the El Paso Office had no prior data concerning the porposed appearance of this individual.

Joe Stewart
100-0-3147

The Bureau on 4/12/59 made available to the El Paso Office an inquiry by Mrs JOE STEWART of 4401 Buffalo, Odessa, Texas, dated 4/12/59 in which she made inquiry concerning the Hogg Foundation, Women's Health Organization and the Anti-Communist Crusade. Also of Mr. W. P. STRUBE, Houston, Texas Secretary of this latter group.

The Bureau advised there was no information of a derogatory nature concerning WILLIAM STRUBE. It is not known if W. P. STRUBE is identical with WILLIAM STRUBE.

2 - Houston (REG. AIRMAIL)
1 - El Paso

WHN:sbf
(3)

100-9540-6

SEARCHED INDEXED
SERIALIZED FILED
MAY 22 1959
FBI - DALLAS

TRUE COPY

3502 Cedar Drive
Dickinson, Texas
July 15, 1959

Senator Ralph Yarborough
Senate Office Bldg.
Washington, D. C.

Dear Sir:

I am writing in regard to the organization known as the Christian Anti-Communism Crusade.

Their executive director, Dr. Fred C. Schwarz of Australia, addressed the U.S. House of Representatives Committee on un-American activities on May 29, 1957. He also addressed the Texas Legislature on March 25, 1959. The first address is recorded in the U.S. Gov't. Printing Office Document No. 92964; the later address is recorded in the Texas House Journal.

Mr. W. P. Strube Jr. of Houston, Secretary of the organization, recently addressed a group of citizens in the First Presbyterian Church here in Dickinson, Texas.

Mr. Strube left a great deal of literature and a request that a study group be formed under him. However, there is doubt in some minds here as to the aim of the organization. The booklets which he sold titled "The Heart, Mind and Soul of Communism", "The Communist Interpretation of Peace", "The Christian Answer to Communism" and "Communism, Diagnosis and Treatment", all by Dr. Schwarz, urge that we study and learn the basic concepts and ultimate goals of Communism, but give little or no means or methods of combating them. On the contrary, they leave a great deal of doubt, fear, and insecurity and tend to undermine our faith in our government, schools and leaders.

There is a question in the minds of many of us as to whether this actually is an anti-Communist organization or a subtle method of Communist indoctrination through our churches and civic organizations.

100-9540-7

Before our church becomes further involved, our Board of Deacons and Elders would like to know what our government leaders know and feel about this organization. If the purpose of the organization is not known, we feel that a study should be made, due to the undesirable results of their presentation.

Any information you may be able to give us will be deeply appreciated.

Respectfully yours,
/s/ George K. Pheneger
George K. Pheneger
Deacon, First Presbyterian Church
Dickinson, Texas

GKP:ir
TRUE COPY

July 29, 1959

Honorable Ralph Yarborough
United States Senate
Washington 25, D. C.

My dear Senator:

I have received your communication postmarked July 24, 1959, enclosing a letter to you dated July 15, 1959, from Mr. George E. Pheneger, Dickinson, Texas.

While I would like to be of assistance in connection with your constituent's inquiry, the FBI has not investigated the organization and individuals mentioned by him. I regret, therefore, that I am unable to furnish information concerning the organization and individuals.

Since Dr. Frederick Charles Schwarz testified before the Committee on Un-American Activities, United States House of Representatives, on May 29, 1957, you may desire to contact that committee for information concerning Dr. Schwarz and his organization.

I have taken the liberty of preparing a copy of Mr. Pheneger's letter, and I am returning the original to you pursuant to your request.

Sincerely yours,

J. Edgar Hoover

Enclosure
1 - Houston (enclosure)
SEE NOTE TO HOUSTON, PAGE TWO

100-95[illegible]-8

Honorable Ralph Yarborough

ATTENTION: SAC, HOUSTON

Enclosed is a copy of the letter from Mr. Pheneger to Senator Yarborough. The Senator forwarded the letter to the Bureau by form memorandum for such consideration as may be warranted and a report thereon. Bufiles contain no identifiable data concerning George K. Pheneger.

The Bureau has had very limited but cordial relations with Senator Yarborough since his first election to the Senate in 1957.

Bufiles contain no identifiable information of a derogatory nature concerning Dr. Frederick Charles Schwarz, William Straube, or the organization Christian Anti-Communist Crusade. Schwarz is reportedly a physician from Australia and during the past several years has toured the United States lecturing on communism. His testimony before the House Committee on Un-American Activities has been given extremely wide publicity through a two-page advertisement by the Allen-Bradley Company of Milwaukee, Wisconsin.

TRUE COPY

HOUSE OF REPRESENTATIVES

AUSTIN

July 24, 1959

Mr. J. Edgar Hoover, Director
Federal Bureau of Investigation
Washington, D. C.

Dear Mr. Hoover:

I am enclosing a letter from Mr. George K. Pheneger, Deacon of the First Presbyterian Church in Dickinson, Texas pointing out a question concerning the organization known as the Christian Anti-Communism Crusade together with a copy of my reply to Mr. Pheneger. The letter is self explanatory and if you have any information which you would be in a position to release that would resolve the doubts as indicated in Mr. Pheneger's letter, I would appreciate your doing so.

Thank you for your anticipated cooperation.

Very truly yours,

/s/ Jerome Jones

Jerome Jones
State Representative

JJ:ls
Enclosures-2

TRUE COPY

100-9540-10

July 31, 1959

Honorable Jerome Jones
House of Representatives
Austin, Texas

My dear Mr. Jones:

Your letter dated July 24, 1959, with its enclosures, has been received, and the interest which prompted your communication is indeed appreciated.

While I would like to be of assistance in connection with the inquiry you received from Mr. George K. Pheneger, Dickinson, Texas, the FBI has not investigated the organization and individuals mentioned by him. I regret, therefore, that I am unable to furnish information concerning the organization and individuals.

Sincerely yours,

J. Edgar Hoover

John Edgar Hoover
Director

1 - Houston (Enclosures - 2)

ATTENTION: SAC, Houston

Enclosed are a copy of correspondent's communication and a copy of the correspondent's letter dated 7-24-59 addressed to George K. Pheneger, Dickinson, Texas. 100-340-11
Correspondent furnished the Bureau a letter he received from Pheneger dated 7-17-59. It is noted that Pheneger's letter

SERIALIZED FILED
1959
FBI - HOUSTON

TRUE COPY

July 24, 1959

Mr. George K. Pheneger
Deacon, First Presbyterian Church
Dickinson, Texas

Dear Mr. Pheneger:

Thank you for your letter of July 17, 1959 concerning the purposes and activities of the Christian Anti-Communism Crusade. I want to commend you on your alertness to the problem of Communist infiltration in our schools and churches. I consider this to be one of our great problems in the United States today. As you no doubt know the Christian Anti-Communism Crusade purports to be an anti-Communist organization and I know nothing to the contrary. However, the possibility that you suggest is something to be considered and I am taking the liberty of forwarding your letter to the Federal Bureau of Investigation in Washington so that they may consider the matter. This organization is in a better position to make a study as you have suggested and thereby obtain a fair and factual determination of this organiztion.

I appreciate the interest of yourself and your church in this matter and I would appreciate your giving me your advice in matters you deem worthy of comment.

If I can be of service to you or your church in any way, please let me know.

Best personal regards,

Jerome Jones
State Representative

JJ:ls

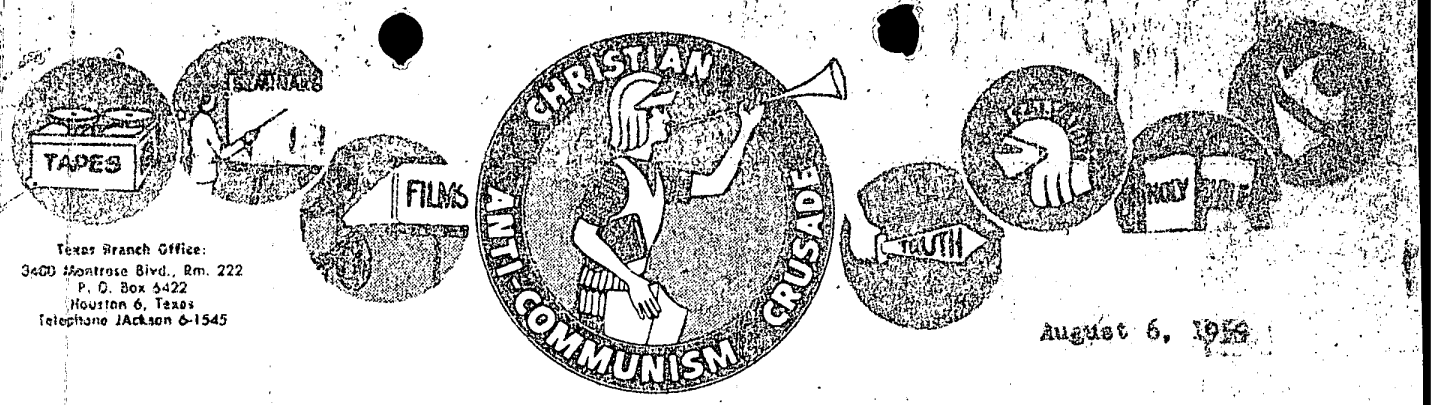
100-9540-9

TRUE COPY

Honorable Jerome Jones

NOTE TO HOUSTON, CONTINUED

was addressed to "Rep. Jerome Kerns" and is identical in every respect to the letter Pheneger directed to U. S. Senator Ralph Yarborough dated 7-15-59. A copy of the letter to Senator Yarborough was furnished your office with a copy of Bulet to the Senator dated 7-29-59. You were also furnished information concerning Dr. Frederick C. Schwarz, William Strube, and the Christian Anti-Communism Crusade.



Texas Branch Office:
3400 Montrose Blvd., Rm. 222
P. O. Box 5422
Houston 6, Texas
Telephone JAckson 6-1545

August 6, 1959

Federal Bureau of Investigation
Washington, D. C.

Attention: J. Edgar Hoover

Dear Mr. Hoover:

During the past few months I have seen a number of flyers such as the attached, that appear to be coming from your department. We would appreciate receiving a sample of any and all material that you have available for distribution on the problem of subversion and how to fight communism.

Dr. Fred C. Schwarz, our Executive Director and President, has spoken in Washington on numerous occasions, before the War College, and also before the House Un-American Activities Committee. His testimony has been published in major newspapers throughout the country by the Allen-Bradley Company. Possibly you have seen a copy of it; one is enclosed for your reference.

We are conducting a number of schools to help train people in this battle against Communism. We deal strictly with the subject of "What Is It?" and not "Who Are They?" except where we have someone like Richard Arens or Walter Judd, or someone of that type that is in a position to use a certain element of expose, backed up with responsible facts. A few brochures of schools we have held before is enclosed. Our next major school is in Indianapolis, Indiana. We are contemplating a major school in the Houston area in March of next year. It will be our third annual presentation in the Houston area. We conduct these in Houston on three or four consecutive Saturdays. Would it be possible for you to speak at one of those sessions, and what would be the conditions of your participation? We would be able to cover your expenses from Washington and return.

Respectfully submitted

W. P. Straubo, Jr.
Secretary

WPSjb
Encl.

100-9540-12

SEARCHED ... INDEXED ...
SERIALIZED ... FILED ...
AUG 15 1959
FBI - HOUSTON

Christian Anti-Communism Crusade
Box 890, Long Beach 1, Calif.
P. O. Box 6599
Houston 6, Texas

Officers:
Fred C. Schwarz, M.D., President
Fran Rhiley, Executive Vice-President
John G. Lofflin, Vice-President
Mrs. [illegible], Vice-President
George W. Wescott, M.D., Vice-President
W. P. Straubo, Jr., Secretary

SEMINAR SCHEDULE

SEMINAR DIRECTOR, W. P. STRUBE, JR.
President of Mid American Life Insurance Company
Secretary of The Christian Anti-Communism Crusade

Registration 8:45 A.M.

"MARXIST PHILOSOPHY" – W. P. Strube, Jr. 9:00 A.M.
Doctrines of Dialectical Materialism, Millenium, Regeneration, Confession, Reward. – How do people become Communists?

"THE COMMUNIST WEAPON OF ALLURE" 10:00 A.M.
Dr. Warren Walsh, Professor of Russian History at the Maxwell Graduate School of Citizenship and Special Advisor, Syracuse University, explains the methods used by Communist to gain sympathizers. (U. S. Army Film.)

Coffee Break 10:30 A.M.

"LENIN'S PROGRAM FOR WORLD CONQUEST" 10:45 A.M.
– W. P. Strube, Jr.
Application of Discipline and Marxist Philosophy, History of Bolshevik Party, Blueprint and Tentative Date of World Conquest.

"A LOOK AT SOCIALISM" 11:45 A.M.
Starting with Webster's definition, the philosophy, the substance, the origin, and the record of Socialism in practice are objectively studied – through dramatizations, actual film footage made in England, and the many other interesting facts at hand. (Film – Harding College.)

Recess for Lunch 12:00 A.M.

* * * * * * *

All questions given must be written and signed. During the day, as you think of questions, please write them down to give to the speaker for answers during the appropriate session.

"COMMUNIST BLUEPRINT FOR CONQUEST" 2:00 P.M.
Mr. Borris H. Klassen, U. S. Department of State explains methods and techniques used by the Communists to seize power in a country. (U. S. Army Film)

"COMMUNIST BLUEPRINT FOR CONQUEST OF AMERICA" – W. P. Strube, Jr. 2:30 P.M.
How Churches, Schools, and Industry are cooperating for their own destruction DO YOU WANT PEACE?

Coffee Break 3:15 P.M.

"A LOOK AT CAPITALISM" 3:30 P.M.
Neither Socialism nor Communism ever will become established in the U. S. A. if each generation of Americans gets a clear understanding of our American system of capitalism, how it works, and the comparative advantages it produces for all citizens. (Film – Harding College)

"WHAT CAN WE DO" – W. P. Strube, Jr. – 3:45 P.M.
Suggested methods as to how to combat this deadly foe. Any questions unanswered will be answered in the closing of this hour.

"RESPONSIBILITY OF AMERICAN CITIZENSHIP" 4:45 P.M.
American citizenship is one of the most precious gifts on earth; it is a combination of privileges and responsibilities. The responsibility must be developed by each new generation, else the heritage of freedom will die. Eight great obligations of citizenship are discussed. (Film – Harding College)

* * * * * * *

"THE CRIMSON SHADOW" 7:30 P.M.
The Christian Anti-Communism Crusade film featuring Dr. Fred Schwarz.

"COMMUNISM IN WORLD EVENTS" 8:00 P.M.
– W. P. Strube, Jr.
Significance of Suez, Poland, Hungary Crisis, Communist Control of the Hawaiian Islands. Will the Middle East Crisis or Formosa Conflict bring World War III?

BOOKLETS AVAILABLE

Heart, Mind, and Soul of Communism
Communist Interpretation of Peace
Communism - America's Mortal Enemy
Communism - Diagnosis and Treatment
Christian Answer to Communism
The Communist Mind

TAPE RECORDINGS AVAILABLE

Over 100 hours

FILMS AVAILABLE

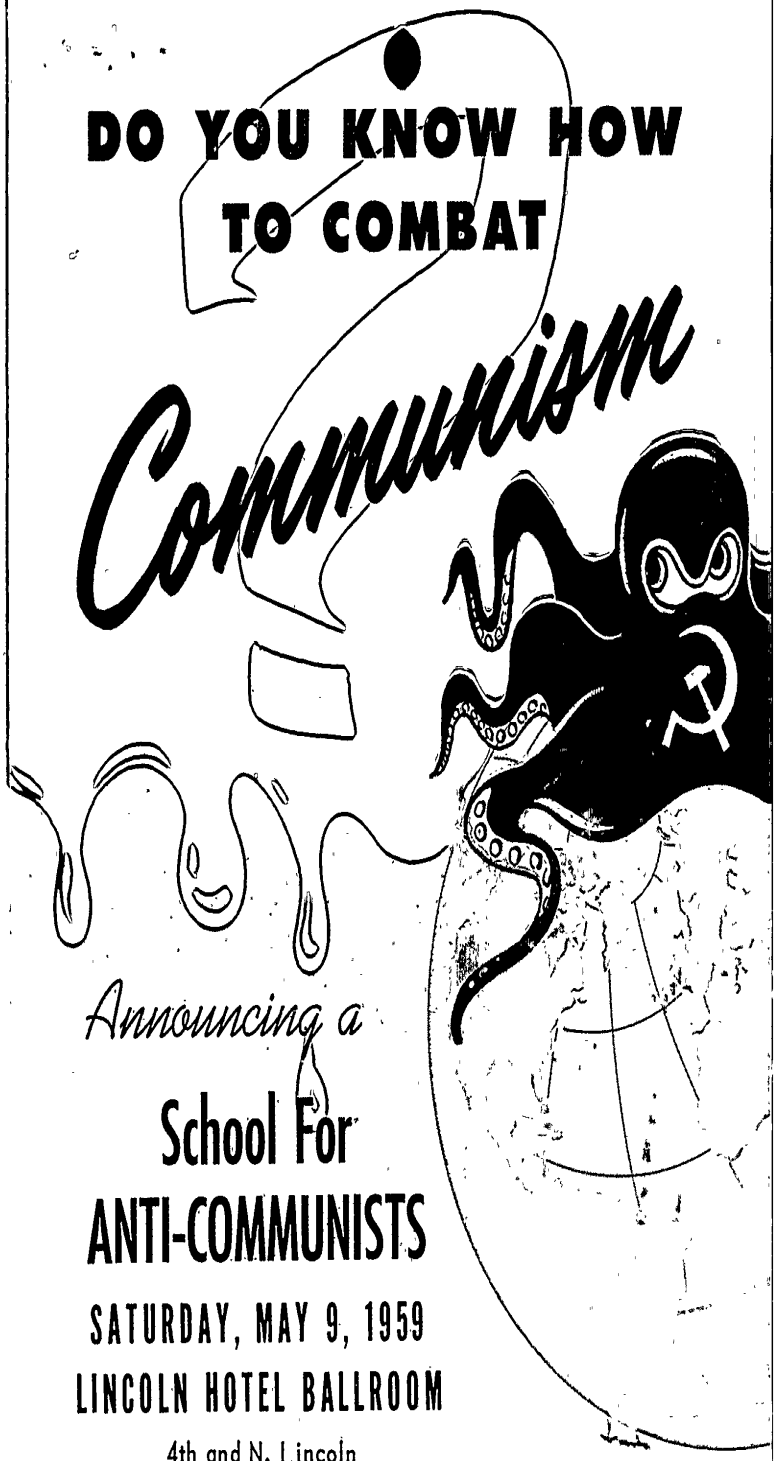
The Red Plague
Communist Weapons of Allure
Crimson Shadow
Dead Men on Furlough
Communist Blue Print for Conquest

MEMBERSHIP IN CRUSADE

$100 – Life Membership $10 – Per Year

All Available from
CHRISTIAN ANTI-COMMUNISM CRUSADE
P. O. Box 6422
Houston 6, Texas

DO YOU KNOW HOW TO COMBAT *Communism*



Announcing a

School For ANTI-COMMUNISTS

SATURDAY, MAY 9, 1959

LINCOLN HOTEL BALLROOM

4th and N. Lincoln
Odessa, Texas

Basic information concerning the Communist...

MIND
MORALS
MOTIVES
METHODS

Presented by
CHRISTIAN ANTI-COMMUNISM CRUSADE
P. O. Box 6422 Houston 6, Texas

August 14, 1959

Mr. W. P. Strube, Jr.
Secretary
Christian Anti-Communism Crusade
Houston Office
Post Office Box 6422
Houston 3, Texas

Dear Mr. Strube:

Your letter dated August 6, 1959, with enclosures, has been received. As you requested, I am enclosing some material on communism.

Due to the uncertainty of my schedule I regret that I will be unable to accept your invitation to speak before your session during March of 1960. I know you will understand and appreciate that it would not be fair for me to make tentative arrangements and then at the last moment be forced to cancel because of some unforeseen emergency.

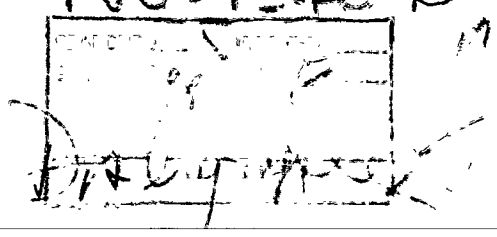
Sincerely yours,

J. Edgar Hoover

Enclosures (6)

1 - Houston - Enclosures (2)

100-9540-13



DIRECTOR, FBI 8-31-59

SAC, HOUSTON (62-1470)

ORAN L. LEMELLEN,
President, J. Edgar Hoover Study Club,
Tyler, Texas
INFORMATION CONCERNING

RE: Letter from Dallas to Bureau, 8-20-59

For the information of the Dallas Division, a review of the Houston files discloses the following information concerning the Christian Anti-Communism Crusade, P. O. Box 6422, Houston 6, Texas.

On 10-6-58, Mr. W. P. STRUBE, JR. telephonically advised the Houston Division that he is President of the Mid-American Life Insurance Company, 3400 Montrose Blvd., Houston, Texas and is also secretary of the Christian Anti-Communism Crusade. He advised that in the latter capacity he frequently speaks before civic and religious groups.

The Bureau under date of 7-29-59 made available to the Houston Division a copy of a letter dated 7-15-59 to Senator RALPH YARBOROUGH, Senate Office Building, Washington, D. C. from GEORGE K. PHENEGER, Deacon, First Presbyterian Church, Dickinson, Texas. Therein PHENEGER informed that the executive director of the Christian Anti-Communism Crusade is Dr. FRED C. SCHWARZ of Australia. It was also indicated that SCHWARZ testified before the Committee on Un-American Activities, United States House of Representatives on May 29, 1957. PHENEGER further stated in his letter that W. P. STRUBE, JR., of Houston, Texas had recently addressed a group of citizens in the First Presbyterian Church at Dickinson, Texas. PHENEGER stated that STRUBE left considerable literature at the Church and requested that a study group be formed. PHENEGER advised that some in the First Presbyterian Church at Dickinson, Texas were a bit dubious as to the true objectives of the Christian Anti-Communism Crusade and wanted to be certain of its Anti-Communist character before becoming too involved in it.

2 - Bureau
2 - Dallas (62-0)
(2) - Houston
(1 - 62-1470)
(1 - 100-9540)

DMP:ma
(6)

100-9540-14

HO 62-1470

The Bureau advised the Houston Division under date of 7-29-59 that Bureau files contain no identifiable information of a derogatory nature concerning Dr. FREDERICK CHARLES SCHWARZ, WILLIAM STRUBE, or the organization, Christian Anti-Communism Crusade.

The Houston files further reflect that under date of 8-6-59, W. P. STRUBE, JR., Secretary, Christian Anti-Communism Crusade, inquired if the Director might find it possible to speak at a school contemplated to be held in Houston, Texas, during March, 1960. Under date of 8-14-59, the Bureau advised STRUBE it was not possible to accept the invitation to speak because of the uncertainty of the Director's schedule.

- RUC -

MID AMERICAN Life Insurance COMPANY

JACKSON 6-1545 P.O. Box 6422

HOUSTON 6, TEXAS

December 16, 1959

Federal Bureau of Investigation
Federal Office Building
Houston, Texas

Gentlemen:

For several years, it has been my pleasure to serve as International Secretary of the Christian Anti-Communism Crusade, headed by Dr. Fred C. Schwarz, a physician and surgeon from Sydney, Australia. In this capacity, it has been my pleasure to speak between 250 and 300 times a year to civic clubs, churches and schools throughout this area, and now the meetings are expanding all over the United States. A little brochure entitled "Insurance Against the Evils of Communism" is enclosed for your perusal.

In keeping posted as to Communist activities and in procuring additional material for study purposes, I have written to a number of Communist bookstores in this country and ordered material. I have also contacted several Communist front organizations requesting literature, which has been mailed to me. I have always used my correct name in requesting such information or literature.

I have had the pleasure of conducting a number of seminars for our military groups, the latest one was for the Command Staff of the Eighth Naval District of New Orleans under the direction of Admiral Walter Schindler. A copy of that program is also enclosed. Navy Intelligence, Army Intelligence and numerous other investigative organizations have checked me, as to my activities and background, and I am sure that you are aware of the fact that I would not be permitted to speak on military bases unless such investigations eliminated any question of doubt as to my loyalty to the American way of life.

It has been suggested by a responsible government leader that I make this information a matter of record with you. For further information on the Christian Anti-Communism Crusade or Dr. Schwarz, you can check with Dunn and Bradstreet, Better Business Bureau, Retail Credit, U. S. State Department, and/or Military Intelligence. Dr. Schwarz's address before the House Un-American Activities Committee in Washington, a few years ago, has probably had wider distribution than any other U. S. Government Document in the history of the United States. I stand ready to serve your organization, or any other branch of this government in this battle against International Communism.

Respectfully submitted

100-9540-15

W. P. Strube, Jr.
President

WPS:b
Encl.

Exclusively Reinsurance

SEARCHED ... INDEXED ...
SERIALIZED ... FILED ...
DEC ...
FBI - HOUSTON

800 Federal Office Building
Houston 2, Texas
December 30, 1959

Mr. W. P. Strube, Jr.
Secretary
Christian Anti-Communism Crusade
Houston Office
Post Office Box 6422
Houston 6, Texas

Dear Mr. Strube:

Your letter of December 16, 1959, with enclosures has been received and is being made a matter of record.

Very truly yours,

H. O. HAWKINS
Special Agent in Charge

1 - Addressee
1 - Houston (100-9540)

JED:ysk
(2)

100-9540-16

DECLASSIFICATION AUTHORITY DERIVED FROM:
FBI AUTOMATIC DECLASSIFICATION GUIDE
DATE 09-07-2010

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

UNITED STATES DEPARTMENT OF JUSTICE

FEDERAL BUREAU OF ~~INVESTIGATION~~ JAIL DATA

In Reply, Please Refer to File No.

WASHINGTON 25, D.C.
January 19, 1960

W.P. STRUBE, JR.

An informant, who has furnished reliable information in the past, advised on January 18, 1960, that he learned from W.P. Strube, Jr. that Strube is interested in obtaining copies of Soviet Union magazines dealing with Premier Nikita S. Khrushchev's visit to the United States, and to China. Strube indicated to the informant that he also desires to obtain all books written by William Z. Foster, particularly "Toward Soviet America" and "Twilight of World Capitalism".

According to the informant, Strube recently contacted the Soviet Embassy, in Washington, D.C., to obtain the magazines and books, asking that they be forwarded to him at his expense.

The informant related that Strube resides in Houston, Texas.

On December 13, 1959, another informant, who has furnished reliable information in the past, advised that William Z. Foster was re-elected chairman emeritus of the Communist Party, United States of America (USA), at the Seventeenth National Convention of the Communist Party, USA, held December 10 through December 13, 1959, in New York, New York.

The Communist Party, USA, has been designated by the Attorney General pursuant to Executive Order 10450.

This document contains neither recommendations nor conclusions of the FBI. It is the property of the FBI and is loaned to your agency; it and its contents are not to be distributed outside your agency.

100-9540-17

SEARCHED ... INDEXED
SERIALIZED ... FILED
JAN 28 1960
FBI

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~ JAIL DATA

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1/19/60

AIRTEL

TO: DIRECTOR, FBI

FROM: SAC, WFO (105-[redacted])

W.F. STRUBE, JR.
IS-R
(OO: HO)

Enclosed are five copies for the Bureau and two copies for Houston of a letterhead memo based on info furnished by a highly confidential source (documentation - anonymous).

The memo is classified "Confidential" because of the sensitive nature of the investigative technique used and because it reveals investigative interest in a foreign diplomatic establishment.

The informant indicated STRUBE utilizes Post Office Box 6423, Houston, Texas.

The second informant in enclosed memo is [redacted] who furnished info on 12/13/59. b2 b7D

WFO records contain no info identifiable with the subject.

Houston proceed in accordance with Section 105-K, Manual of Instructions. Furnish WFO with info copy of investigative results.

RUC
3-Bureau (Encls.5)
2-Houston (Encls.2) (RM&M)
2-WFO
(1-100-16597 Sub H)
JTF/sal
(7)

AIRTEL 100-9540-18

JAN 23 1960

STANDARD FORM NO. 64

Office Memorandum • UNITED STATES GOVERNMENT

TO : SAC, HOUSTON (100-9540)

DATE: 2/1/60

FROM : SA D. W. Fults Jr.

SUBJECT: CHRISTIAN ANTI-COMMUNISM CRUSADE
SECURITY MATTER - C

At 10:20 AM, 2/1/60, William Kluetz, 7306 Gore Drive, Houston, Texas, telephone HI-2-3284, telephonically inquired concerning the captioned organization. He stated on Suday night 1/31/60 at the St. Stephen Lutheran Church, 8140 East Houston Road, a representative of the captioned organization spoke. He could not recall the speaker's name, but the speaker's remarks were most anti-Communist in nature. He did recall that the speaker was an insurance man in the city of Houston. He observed that he was merely curious as to the nature and purposes of the captioned organization.

I explained to Mr. Kluetz that inasmuch as the information in our files is confidential in nature, it would not be possible to advise him pursuant to his query. He was most courteous and stated that he understood the positions of the FBI in this regard.

ACTION:

For record purposes only.

100-9540-19

SEARCHED INDEXED
SERIALIZED FILED
FEB 3 - 1960
FBI - HOUSTON

DIRECTOR, FBI 2/18/60

SAC, HOUSTON (100-9540)

W. P. STRUEE, JR.
IS-R
(OO: Houston)

RE: Washington Field airtel to Bureau, dated 1/19/60.

Referenced airtel enclosed two copies of memorandum for Houston reflecting STRUEE had contacted the Soviet Embassy in Washington, D.C., for purpose of obtaining books and magazines.

Bureau has previously been advised regarding STRUEE, who is Secretary of the Christian Anti-Communism Crusade. Initial information furnished the Bureau along this line was by Houston letter to Bureau, 10/23/58, captioned " W.P. STRUEE, INFORMATION CONCERNING". STRUEE has corresponded directly with the Bureau in one or more instances.

In a letter to the Houston Office dated 12/16/59 STRUEE advised among other things as follows:

"In keeping posted as to Communist activities and in procuring additional material for study purposes, I have written to a number of Communist bookstores in this country and ordered material. I have also contacted several Communist front organizations requesting literature, which has been mailed to me. I have always used my correct name in requesting such information or literature."

It is felt that STRUEE's contact with the Soviet Embassy would be for the same purpose as above. There has been no indication STRUEE has deviated from the objectives he has stated his organization

- C -

0-1 rec'd 2/29/60
0-1 rec'd 2/29/60

2 - Bureau (RM)
2 - Washington Field (Info.) (RM)
1 - Houston

KBJ:ss
(5)

100-9540-20

stands for, which is primarily to enlighten the people regarding the threat of communism.

Therefore, no further action in this matter is contemplated.

TRUE COPY

March 16, 1960.

Dear Mr Hoover,

I normally am not a letter writer of complaints which is partially what this letter is. This, however, is the third draft because I invariably become incensed as it progresses. Please don't feel this is a crank letter. It is a letter asking for suggestions and, possibly, encouragement.

For some time I have been getting madder and madder at T. V., newspapers, magazines, etc for the flood of sheer socialism, smearing of American traditions and build up of Russian power at the expense of the U. S.

The final blow came yesterday, the 15th. The Houston Post in its lead editorial made me so mad I can hardly see. After a buildup of poor sick Khruschev and the "royal preparations" being made in France for his visit purportedly to soften him in the pending negotiations -- as if it has ever done any good -- the filthy trash ended, "Let us wish Comrade Khruschev a speedy recovery". How does this S.O.B. get preferential treatment over Hitler Hirohito and others of that stripe? This is even a broader scope war than any this country has had in the past and, contrary to its name, doesn't seem so very cold except for individual American effort which to date isn't even luke warm.

To top this trash off last night's The Rifleman reached the ultimate in smearing officers in the Army and Army discipline by lambasting both in the same show. It went farther in undermining than any I have ever seen. This sort of thing has gone on so long the average American shrugs off the thought of Communism and feels anyone discussing the THREAT of Communism is a wild eyed radical who should be committed.

I am almost of the opinion that you are my last resort. Can you tell me what to do to not only stem but reverse this trend.

There currently is a group meeting each Saturday called The Christian Anti-Communist School. It is presided over by a Paul Strubbe and has had various speakers as Ghanus, a Constantine something or other and others. Is this a bona-fide American group. Then there is a group called the John Burch Society. It was organized by a Robart Welch to form groups to write congressmen pro or con on various legislation etc. such as no summit meeting etc. Is it bona fide?

100-25540-91

TRUE COPY

Also, where can I get a pro American -- that means, what is good for the Teddy Rooseveltian America -- view point on the Summit Meeting, is it good or bad. That is only one subject. There are literally hundreds that I would like to know about. Maybe I can write letters that may help and, in time, get others to write to bring some form of resistance to galloping socialism. Is there such a thing any more as a pro American publication? I tried to find the Mercury having been told it was not tinged. Now I'm told it is anti this and that. In any case I can't find it. Can you provide me a list of publications and where I can find them?

/s/ W. J. Cotterell III
8111 Bromley Rd
Houston - 24, Texas

Office Memorandum • UNITED STATES GOVERNMENT

TO : SAC (100-9540) DATE: 6/1/60

FROM : SA EDWARD C. MANDT

SUBJECT: W. P. STRUBE, JR.
IS - R
CO - Houston

On 5/20/60 DR. W. V. WILLIAM COLE, 6310 Scribner Road, Houston, Phone CY 5-1775, appeared at this office and stated that he felt that captioned individual should be investigated as a possible Communist sympathizer. He based his opinion on the fact that a number of people who know him and have heard him talk feel that he is too radical and that his apparent anti-Communism might be a front to actually instill Communist ideas into the minds of Americans.

DR. COLE stated that he heard that on one occasion subject made the statement that "Russia will take over this country by 1972" COLE does not know whether STRUBE meant this as a boastful prophesy or as a warning.

It was explained to COLE that the FBI cannot investigate an individual unless sufficient information of a specific nature is received, but that COLE's information would be made a matter of record in this office.

ECH

100-9540-22

SEARCHED
SERIALIZED
JUN 2 1960
FBI - HO.

JUNIOR TRIVIUM CLUB

LIBERTY, TEXAS

May 26, 1960

Mr. J. Edgar Hoover, Director,
Federal Bureau of Investigation,
Washington, D. C.

Dear Sir:

Last month the Junior Trivium Club (a local young women's organization) sponsored a public meeting on communism at which time Mr. W. P. Strube, Jr., president of the Mid-American Life Insurance Company of Houston and secretary of the Christian Anti-Communism Crusade spoke. Those present for this meeting were most impressed by the facts stated regarding "Communists Blueprint For World Conquest." During the question and answer period a gentleman posed the question, "how do we know but what you are a communist yourself?" Mr. Strube challenged this group assembled and this gentleman to check with a number of sources, one of which was the Federal Bureau of Investigation, on his and the Crusade's records.

In view of the fact that our organization might possibly support and sponsor a four-day seminar on this vitally important subject, we are requesting that you please furnish us with your opinion of this particular organization and gentleman (He did arouse very much interest in this locality.)

May we hear from you, please.

Yours very truly,

JUNIOR TRIVIUM CLUB

Mrs. Howard Guy

Mrs. Howard Guy, President,
P. O. Box 940, Liberty, Texas.

NOV 3
100-9540-23
SEARCHED
SERIALIZED
JUN 8 - 1960
FBI

June 7, 1960

Mrs. Howard Guy
President
Junior Trivium Club
Post Office Box 940
Liberty, Texas

Dear Mrs. Guy:

I have received your letter of May 26, 1960, and appreciate the interest which prompted the communication.

In response to your inquiry, the function of the FBI as a fact-gathering agency does not extend to furnishing evaluations or comments concerning the character or integrity of any individual, publication or organization. I can advise you, however, that the Christian Anti-Communism Crusade has not been the subject of an investigation by this Bureau. This should not, of course, be construed as a clearance or nonclearance of this organization by the FBI.

In view of your concern, I am enclosing some material regarding the communist menace which you may wish to read.

Sincerely yours,

J. Edgar Hoover

SEARCHED
SERIALIZED
JUN 8 - 1960
FBI - HOUSTON

Enclosures (3)
2 - SAC Houston - Enclosures (2)

ATTENTION SAC: Contact Mr. W. P. Strube, Jr., Secretary, Christian Anti-Communism Crusade, Post Office Box 6422, Houston 6, Texas, and tactfully request that he refrain in the future from referring anyone to this Bureau for information concerning him or his organization. Point out to him that the files of the FBI are confidential and we do not furnish evaluations or comments concerning the character or integrity of any individual, publication or organization. Sulet results of your contact no later than 6-15-60 under above caption, Research (Correspondence and Tours Section.)

DIRECTOR, FBI 6/15/60

SAC, HOUSTON (100-9540)

W. B. STRUBE, JR.,
SECRETARY, CHRISTIAN
ANTI-COMMUNISM CRUSADE,
P. O. BOX 6422,
HOUSTON 6, TEXAS
RESEARCH (CORRESPONDENCE
AND TOURS SECTION)

Reference is made to Bureau letter dated 6/7/60 addressed to Mrs. HOWARD GUY, President, Junior Trivium Club, Post Office Box 940, Liberty, Texas, which bore a note requesting that this Office contact Mr. STRUBE.

On 6/15/60, Mr. STRUBE was contacted by SA GRAHAM W. KITCHEL, and was advised that the files of the FBI are confidential and that we do not furnish evaluations or comments concerning the character or integrity of any individual, publication, or organization. He was advised that we had received some inquiries concerning him and his group indicating that he had suggested that such inquiries be directed to the Federal Bureau of Investigation in order to obtain his record.

Mr. STRUBE advised that he has not intentionally instructed anyone or suggested to them that they contact the Federal Bureau of Investigation for any information concerning him or his organization. He stated that he has persistently advised everyone inquiring about him to advise the Federal Bureau of Investigation if they thought he or his organization was subversive. Mr. STRUBE stated that he was well aware of the fact that the Federal Bureau of Investigation is an investigative organization and does not give clearances on any individual or group and does not designate individuals or groups as subversive. He stated that he has the highest

C
2 - Bureau (RM)
1 - Houston

CHK:yk
(3)

FORM 0-1
DATE RECEIVED 6-21-60
DATE RETURNED 6-21-60
REPORT BY done

100-9540-25

respect for the Federal Bureau of Investigation and Director J. EDGAR HOOVER and would be glad to be of assistance in any manner possible. He stated that he would endeavor to make it clear in the future that the Federal Bureau of Investigation should not be contacted in order to gain clearance for him or his organization.

OPTIONAL FORM NO. 10
5010-104-02
UNITED STATES GOVERNMENT

Memorandum

TO : SAC, 100-9540 DATE: 7/16/60

FROM : SA JAMES R. POWERS

SUBJECT: WILLIAM P. STRUBE, JR.
CHRISTIAN ANTI-COMMUNIST CRUSADE
IS-R

On July 16, 1960, Mrs. LLOYD WARD, Ward Pharmacy, Tomball, Texas called the office to inquire about Subject since he has been making speeches at Waller, Texas and she wanted to know if captioned organization was worthy of any contributions she might wish to make.

She was advised that the law prohibits the release of any information in FBI files to unauthorized persons and that it would not be possible to comply with her request. She was furnished the address in the event she desired to correspond with the U. S. Attorney General to obtain a list of subversive organizations.

JRP: jrp
(2)

100-9540-26

SEARCHED
SERIALIZED
JUL 19 1960
FBI

TRUE COPY

8601 Winkler, Apt. 3
Houston 17, Texas
July 26, 1960

Dear Mr. Hoover:

It is with the utmost appreciation that Americans in my area extend to you our heart-felt thanks and gratitude for your efforts in exposing to the American public the threat of communist conspiracy. As you may know, Americans everywhere are gradually uniting in their efforts to assist you in this conflict.

In the Houston area one of the primary sources of apparent anti-communist literature is the Christian Anti-Communism Crusade Headquarters.

However, before the group of patriots, of which I am a member, can feel at ease in supporting this organization and making use of the literature they so freely offer, we felt compelled to seek out your advice.

Therefore, taking fully into consideration the pressing matters in which you are involved, will you please be so kind as to inform us as to whether or not this is truly an anti-communist organization.

To be quite frank, I have seen correspondence over your signature in answer to similar inquiries which still left room for doubt as to the nature of the organization. Such correspondence has generally been in the tenor of "My position will not allow me to recommend this organization".

Thus will you please be as explicit as your information will allow in informing us as to whether this is a communist or an American organization.

Yours very truly,

/s/ Brooks Hamilton
Brooks Hamilton

P.S. I am enclosing postage which will allow you to give me a return answer via air mail.

Mr. J. Edgar Hoover
Federal Bureau of Investigation
Washington, D. C.

100-95440-27

SEARCHED ... INDEXED
SERIALIZED ... FILED
AUG 1960
FBI - WASHINGTON

TRUE COPY

August 5, 1960

AIRMAIL

Mr. Brooks Hamilton
Apartment 3
8601 Winkler
Houston 17, Texas

Dear Mr. Hamilton:

Your letter dated July 26, 1960, with its enclosures, has been received, and the interest which prompted your communication is indeed appreciated.

Your awareness of the communist menace and your desire to know more about the organizations to which you give your support are commendable; however, I trust you can appreciate my inability to be of assistance in this regard. The prescribed functions of the FBI as an investigative agency do not permit this Bureau to draw conclusions or make evaluations concerning the character or integrity of any organization or individual. I am sure you will agree that for me to furnish information of the type you requested would, in effect, constitute an approval or disapproval of the organization you mentioned.

Your kind comments are indeed gratifying, and I trust the work of this Bureau will continue to merit your support.

Sincerely yours,

J. Edgar Hoover

John Edgar Hoover
Director

1 - Houston (enclosure)
ATTENTION: SAC, HOUSTON

Enclosed is a copy of correspondent's communication. Bufiles contain no identifiable data concerning the correspondent.

NOTE TO HOUSTON, CONTINUED, PAGE TWO

Mr. Brooks Hamilton

NOTE TO HOUSTON, CONTINUED

Bufiles contain no identifiable derogatory information concerning the Christian Anti-Communism Crusade. Dr. Frederick Charles Schwarz of the Christian Anti-Communism Crusade is reportedly a physician from Australia and during the past several years has toured the United States lecturing on communism.

TRUE COPY

Federal Bureau of Investigation
Washington, D. C.

Attention: Mr. Hoover

Dear Mr. Hoover:

I am very interested in several programs that are fighting Communism and have read much of the material put out by various organizations and individuals. I have read "The Big Decision", "I Lead Three Lives" and "I Was a Slave in Russia" and am well aware of the dangers of today. I feel certain that the people that wrote these books could not tell anything that is not true, however, I recently have heard Dr. Craig of the Central Presbyterian Church here in Houston and he indicated that you have made a statement that the Christian Crusade, Major Bundy, and Carl McIntire and others have taken a statement of yours out of the context and used it for their benefits.

I feel that we cannot fight Communist except with the truth- not part but the whole truth. I have listened to these programs and felt certain that they would not say anything over the Radio or print anything that was not true. However, I think it is our duty to keep our fight with real facts, therefore, I shall appreciate your advising me if these programs are reliable.

Please also advise me if the Cinema Educational Guild, Inc. is reliable? They have put out a booklet "Documentation of the Red Stars". I haven't ordered this booklet, mainly, as I felt that many of the stars they listed could not be associated with the Communist. It could be that they might have joined one of their Fronts innocently, and if they did and then left when they discovered it was a Communist Front, I don't feel that they should be condemned and listed as a communist.

Do you have any literature that would help me and others to know how to be on guard for the real organizations of the Communist and how to keep the Christian Crusade, Major Bundy and such from using facts that are not true in every detail?

Your advices will be appreciated.

SEARCHED INDEXED
SERIALIZED FILED
AUG 1960
FBI - HOUSTON

Sincerely,

/s/ Fay L. Golightly
Fay L. Golightly
3830 Childress
Houston 5, Texas

4 29

TRUE COPY

August 8, 1960

Miss Fay L. Golightly
3830 Childress
Houston 5, Texas

Dear Miss Golightly:

Your letter postmarked July 29, 1960, has been received, and the interest which prompted your communication is indeed appreciated.

In response to your inquiry, I must advise that the jurisdiction and responsibilities of the FBI do not extend to furnishing evaluations or comments concerning the character or integrity of any individual, publication or organization. I am sure you will understand the necessity for this policy and will not infer that we do or do not have in our files the information you desire.

Pursuant to your request, I am enclosing some items of literature concerning the growing menace of communism to this country which may be of interest to you.

Sincerely yours,

J. Edgar Hoover

John Edgar Hoover
Director

Enclosures (5)

J. 30

1 - Houston (Enclosure) (SEE NOTE, PAGE TWO)

SEARCHED ... INDEXED ...
SERIALIZED ... FILED ...
AUG 8 1960
FBI - HOUSTON

Miss Fay L. Golightly

ATTENTION: SAC, HOUSTON

Enclosed is a copy of correspondent's communication. Bureau files contain no identifiable data concerning correspondent.

The Christian Crusade is very anti-United Nations and the Bureau has had a number of previous inquiries regarding it. The Bureau has not investigated this organization.

Edgar C. Bundy is the General Chairman of the Church League of America and claims to have formerly been a major in Air Force Intelligence. He is also a former Baptist minister who does much lecturing around the country on communism. We have received inquiries concerning allegations that Bundy may have represented himself to be a former Bureau employee in some of his lectures. He has been the subject of a closed impersonation case which did not substantiate the alleged impersonation.

Reverend Carl McIntire heads a controversial religious group in the Camden, New Jersey, area, and the files of that office contain several references connecting him with America-First type activities. Bureau files reveal cordial correspondence with Dr. McIntire in the past.

The Cinema Educational Guild, Incorporated, whose director is Myron C. Fagan, is allegedly an anticommunist group which has been responsible for the distribution of anticommunist, anti-Negro and anti-Semitic pamphlets. Fagan in the past has attempted to use the Director's name in furtherance of his program and it has been necessary on several occasions to contact him and request that he refrain from mentioning the FBI in any way.

The following items of literature were sent to the correspondent:

(1) A reprint from the FBI Law Enforcement Bulletin, March, 1960. "An Analysis of the 17th National Convention of the Communist Party, USA."

(2) "Communism: The Bitter Enemy of Religion."

(NOTE TO SAC, HOUSTON, CONTINUED ON PAGE THREE)

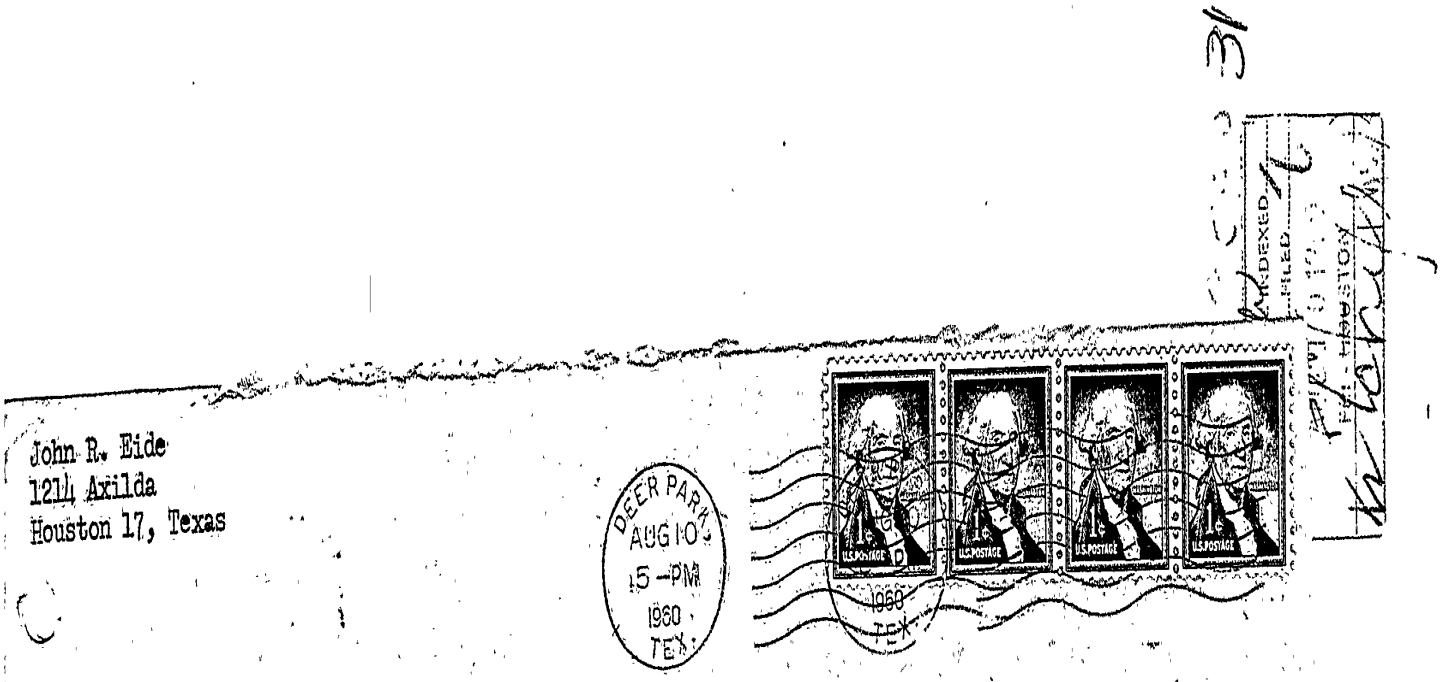
Miss Fay L. Golightly

(ATTENTION: SAC, HOUSTON, CONTINUED)

(3) "God and Country or Communism?"

(4) "Statement of J. Edgar Hoover, Director Federal Bureau of Investigation, Before the Committee on Un-American Activities, House of Representatives, 3:45 p.m., March 26, 1947, Washington, D. C."

(5) "Communist Illusion and Democratic Reality."



John R. Eide
1214 Axilda
Houston 17, Texas

FEDERAL BUREAU OF INVESTIGATION
FEDERAL OFFICE BUILDING
HOUSTON, TEXAS

ATTN: SPECIAL AGENT IN CHARGE

CH-8-1414 Special Report on Reds

SAM JAFFE
LEON JANNEY
GEORGE JESSEL
DANNY KAYE
GENE KELLY
ALEXANDER KNOX
BURT LANCASTER
CANADA LEE
GYPSY ROSE LEE
ELLA LOGAN
PETER LORRE
MYRNA LOY
ALINE MacMAHON
FREDERIC MARCH
MARGO
GROUCHO MARX
MYRON McCORMICK
BURGESS MEREDITH
MARVIN MILLER
HENRY MORGAN
ZERO MOSTEL
MEG MUNDY
EDWARD R. MURROW
LARRY PARKS
GREGORY PECK
SIDNEY POITIER
VINCENT PRICE
ALAN REED
ANNE REVERE
QUENTIN REYNOLDS
EARL ROBINSON
EDWARD G. ROBINSON
SELENA ROYLE
ROBERT RYAN
HAZEL SCOTT
PETE SEEGER
SYLVIA SIDNEY
FRANK SINATRA
GALE SONDERGAARD
LIONEL STANDER
JAN STERLING
HELEN TAMIRIS
JESSICA TANDY
FRANCHOT TONE
ORSON WELLS
SHELLEY WINTERS
JANE WYATT
KEENAN WYNN

WRITERS, DIRECTORS, PRODUCERS, COMPOSERS

HARMON (HY) ALEXANDER
RALPH ALSWANG
HOWARD BAY
LEONARD BERNSTEIN
ALVAH BESSIE
HERBERT BIBERMAN
MICHAEL BLANKFORT
MARC BLITZSTEIN
KERMIT BLOOMGARDEN
RICHARD BROOKS
SIDNEY BUCHMAN
ABE BURROWS
VERA CASPARY
EDWARD CHODOROV
JEROME CHODOROV
HAROLD CLURMAN
LESTER COLE
BETTY COMDEN
MARC CONNELLY
AARON COPLAND
NORMAN CORWIN
CHERYL CRAWFORD
KYLE CRICHTON
JULES DASSIN
AGNES DE MILLE
I. A. L. DIAMOND
WILLIAM DIETERLE
PHILIP DUNNE
CARL FOREMAN
MELVIN FRANK
HETTI FRINGS
MARTIN GABEL
IRA GERSHWIN
SHERIDAN GIBNEY
FRANCES GOODRICH
MORTON GOULD
ADOLPH GREEN
JOHNNY GREEN
ALBERT HACKETT
OSCAR HAMMERSTEIN II
DASHIELL HAMMETT
MOSS HART
E. Y. (YIP) HARBURG
BEN HECHT
HAROLD HECHT
LILLIAN HELLMAN
NAT HIKEN
JOHN HOUSEMAN
JOHN HUSTON
CHARLIE ISAACS
GARSON KANIN
MICHAEL KANIN
GEORGE S. KAUFMAN
ELIA KAZAN
ARTHUR KOBER
STANLEY KRAMER
NORMAN KRASNA
MILLARD LAMPELL
RING LARDNER, JR.
FRITZ LANG
EMMETT LAVERY
JOHN HOWARD LAWSON
RANALD MacDOUGALL
ARCHIBALD MacLEISH
NORMAN MAILER
ALBERT MALTZ

SEARCHED INDEXED SERIALIZED FILED

DANIEL (DANNY) MANN
MARY McCALL
LEWIS MILESTONE
ARTHUR MILLER
VINCENTE MINELLI
DUDLEY NICHOLS
CLIFFORD ODETS
JESS OPPENHEIMER
NORMAN PANAMA
DOROTHY PARKER
OTTO PREMINGER
MADELINE PUGH
SAMSON RAPHAELSON
ELMER RICE
JEROME ROBBINS
HAROLD ROME
ROBERT ROSSON
DORE SCHARY
BUDD SCHULBERG
ARTHUR SCHWARTZ
ADRIAN SCOTT
IRWIN SHAW
HERMAN SHUMLIN
DONALD OGDEN STEWART
JAMES THURBER
SHEPARD TRAUBE
DALTON TRUMBO
PETER VIERTEL
JERRY WALD
WALTER WANGER
JOHN WEXLEY
BILLY WILDER
WILLIAM WYLER
NEDRICK YOUNG

Here you have the names of 200 of the most rabid REDS and Fellow-Travellers. There are MANY more, but lack of space prevents the naming of all. However, those in this list are the most important and flagrant–drive **them** out and it will smash the entire RED Conspiracy in Hollywood and in TELEVISION.

AND REMEMBER THIS:

When and if any Sponsor or Producer or TV Channel official will insist that the RED in his show is "innocent" and "unjustly maligned", **don't you believe it**–because the pro-Communist record of every individual named in this list is **documented** in the files of the House Un-American Activities Committee, in the California State Senate Fact-finding Committee, and other Government investigating Agencies.

(Name)

.....

Street address City (Zone) State

This tract (RED STARS No. 3) can be obtained at the rate of: 100 copies for $2.00 . . . send your order to:

CINEMA EDUCATIONAL GUILD, INC.,
P. O. BOX 46205
Hollywood 46, California

Compiled 1960
RED STARS – No. 3

THE REDS ARE BACK IN HOLLYWOOD!!!

—•—

AMERICANS

To save America from the Communist Conspiracy —

DON'T PATRONIZE REDS!!!

—•—

KEEP THEM OUT
OF YOUR (TV)
LIVING ROOMS —
OUT OF RADIO —
OFF THE SCREEN

—•—

This Tract tells how YOU can do it!

—•—

In 1947, in a speech in Hollywood, Myron C. Fagan, famous Playright-Director-Producer, charged that the REDS had acquired absolute control of Hollywood and Broadway – **and transformed our Stage, Screen and Radio into the Communist Conspiracy's most effective Fifth Column in America** . . . that the RED Stars, Directors, Writers and Producers of Hollywood were the chief supporters, financial and otherwise, of Communist propaganda in America . . . that many films made by the Hollywood REDS were being used by Moscow in Asia, Africa and throughout the world to create hatred of America and Americans . . . that other films were made to craftily glorify COMMUNISM and ONE-WORLD-

ISM . . . and still other films that **deliberately** created dissensions and hatreds between Negroes and Whites, between North and South, between Minority Groups and Americans.

That speech startled the nation. **The Hollywood Moguls frantically denied everything.** That brought the House Un-American Activities Committee into action. Their Hearings in Hollywood and Washington fully confirmed all the (Fagan) charges against the industry and **all the named** Stars – **and sent the notorious "Hollywood Ten" to jail.** That ROCKED the nation! The people, **infuriated,** began to "blacklist" the theatres showing those REDS and the Red Films. Panic swept through the entire industry–it chased Charlie Chaplin out of the country–it drove SCORES of other REDS off the Screen . . . and, far more important, **it closed THOUSANDS of theatres!**

THAT did the job! . . . it hit the Moguls in their most vulnerable spot: **their pocketbook!** – and all their "'righteous" denials changed to piteous pleas for forgiveness. They piously promised that **"never again would they employ any REDS"** – that **"never again would they produce RED-propaganda films"** and for a time they **seemingly** kept their promises– they even barred all tainted Stars from "Oscar" honors.

But **actually** they were merely waiting for the people to **forget.** And even while "waiting" they were scheming and conniving how to keep those REDS "alive" – and finally bring them back into public favor . . . they continued to employ RED writers, (even the "Hollywood Ten") **under fictitious names**. . . they secretly financed pictures made in Europe by banished American REDS . . . other RED Stars were "taken care of" in Broadway plays . . . then, as it grew in stature and importance, TELEVISION became their greatest sanctuary!

And, tragically, the people **did** begin to "forget". And, gradually, the Marches, the Robinsons, the Milestones and all the other REDS began to creep back into Hollywood . . . and once again our theatre Screens are showing films that sanctify MARXISM–ONE-WORLDISM–DESEGREGATION!

In short, TODAY the REDS are back in Hollywood stronger and more brazen than ever – **even the Charlie Chaplin pictures are on the Screens again!**– and all the honors, **including the "Oscar",** have been restored to them . . . **all because the people have forgotten!**

TV AN EVEN GREATER MENACE

Today, virtually all films for TV are made in Hollywood – **by the Hollywood Reds!** RIGHT NOW all the Hollywood Lots are making **thousands** of TV films full of craftily camouflaged RED propaganda, and, **via your TV Set,** they are being piped into your Living Room–**and are brainwashing and poisoning your children right under your very eyes ! ! . . .**

YOU can stop all that!–by **shunning** the theatres that show the REDS–by refusing to buy the products of the Sponsors who bring the REDS into your Living Room! **You did it once–you can do it again!**

Don't ever again FORGET that every time you patronize a Film made by RED Producers, Writers, STARS and STUDIOS you are aiding and abetting Communism . . . Every time you permit REDS to come into your Living Room VIA YOUR TV SET you will be helping Moscow and the INTERNATIONALISTS to destroy America ! ! !

Among the worst offending Sponsors are FORD MOTORS (Ed Sullivan Show in particular); Kraft Foods; General Electric; Chrysler; U. S. Steel, etc. . . . among the worst offending TV Producing Studios are Screen Gems, Inc.; MCA-REVUE; Warner Brothers; DESILU; Four Star Films, Inc.; Theatre Guild, etc. All Sponsors who employ such Studios to produce their TV Shows are, consciously or unconsciously, bringing REDS into your Living Rooms **. . . Watch the Producer's "Credits" on every TV Show you see.**

Here is How YOU Can Drive Them Out:

Read the following list . . . They are the best known of the REDS and FELLOW-TRAVELERS who made our SCREEN Communism's most effective "Pied Piper". They are now coming into your Living Room night after night VIA YOUR TV SET and Radio. . . . WATCH FOR THEM! . . . Keep this list with you ALWAYS! . . . When one of them appears on your SET send a copy of this Tract to the SPONSOR immediately–and WARN him that if he will bring another RED into your Living Room you will never again buy his products–**and then fulfill your warning!** . . . Give this Tract to your Grocer, your Butcher, to ALL Dealers you patronize – **and warn them** – so they can **warn** the Sponsors – also send copies to your local TV and Radio Stations . . . USE THE SAME METHOD WITH YOUR MOVIE THEATRE!

THAT is the only way we will drive the REDS out of Hollywood – Radio –Television . . . **Hit the pocketbooks of the Sponsor ! ! !** REMEMBER: every time you buy the products of a Sponsor who employs REDS you are hurting YOUR COUNTRY ! ! !

LARRY ADLER
LUTHER ADLER
LAUREN BACALL
LUCILLE BALL
JOAN BENNETT
BETSY BLAIR
MARLON BRANDO
LLOYD BRIDGES
EDDIE CANTOR
MORRIS CARNOVSKY
BENNETT CERF
CHARLIE CHAPLIN
LEE J. COBB
RICHARD CONTE
JOSEPH COTTON
GEORGE COULOURIS
HUME CRONYN
HOWARD DA SILVA
BETTE DAVIS
OLIVE DEERING
OLIVIA DE HAVILLAND
ALBERT DEKKER
KIRK DOUGLAS
MELVIN DOUGLAS
ALFRED DRAKE
PAUL DRAPER
HOWARD DUFF
FLORENCE ELDRIDGE
DOUGLAS FAIRBANKS, JR.
JOSE FERRER
HENRY FONDA
AVA GARDNER
BETTY GARRETT
WILL GEER
JACK GILFORD
PAULETTE GODDARD
LLOYD GOUGH
FARLEY GRANGER
BEN GRAUER
UTA HAGEN
JUNE HAVOC
RITA HAYWORTH
VAN HEFLIN
PAUL HENREID
KATHERINE HEPBURN
ROSE HOBART
JUDY HOLLIDAY
LENA HORNE
MARSHA HUNT
CHET HUNTLEY
JOHN IRELAND
BURL IVES

TRUE COPY

Mrs. Robert E. Taylor
1724 Albans Road
Houston, Texas

August 17, 1960

Honorable J. Edgar Hoover
Director
Federal Bureau of Investigation
Washington, D. C.

Dear Honorable Hoover:

I will appreciate receiving any information available regarding the reliability of information published by the following:

Cinema Education Guild, Inc.
P. O. Box 46205, Cole Branch
Hollywood 46, California

I have just read two pamphlets published by the above entitled "UN Tract No. 1 -- U. S. Government (Top Secret) Bulletins provide Documentary Proof that UN is Planned Death-Trap for U. S." and one compiled February 1960 entitled "Red Stars -- No. 3 The Reds are back in Hollywood" This pamphlet lists the names of 200 stars, writers, directors, producers,and composers as being documented in the files of the House Un-American Activities Committee, The California State Senate Fact-finding Committee, the FBI and other Government investigating Agencies. If this list is true, have any of the individuals been cleared?

Two other publications that I would like information on is "Human Events" published in Washington, D. C. and "American Mercury".

I also would like to have any information you have available on the John Birch Society organized by Robert Welsh.

Any information you can give me on the above will be very much appreciated.

Yours very truly,

/s/ Mrs. Robert E. Taylor
Mrs. Robert E. Taylor

100-954-32

SEARCHED ... INDEXED ... SERIALIZED ... FILED ...
AUG 25 1960
FBI - HOUSTON

TRUE COPY

August 24, 1960

Mrs. Robert E. Taylor
1724 Albans Road
Houston, Texas

Dear Mrs. Taylor:

Your letter dated August 17, 1960, with its enclosure, has been received, and the interest which prompted your communication is indeed appreciated.

In response to your inquiries, I must advise that the jurisdiction and responsibilities of the FBI do not extend to furnishing evaluations or comments concerning the character or integrity of any individual, publication or organization. The FBI is strictly an investigative agency of the Federal Government and, as such, does not issue clearances or nonclearances. Furthermore, information in our files is maintained as confidential and available only for official use in accordance with a regulation of the Department of Justice. I am sure you will understand the necessity for this policy and will not infer that we do or do not have in our files the information you desire.

In keeping with this policy, I am unable to comment concerning the authenticity of the material contained in the pamphlet you furnished. I can state, however, that neither the Cinema Educational Guild, Incorporated, nor Myron C. Fagan, National Director of the Cinema Educational Guild, Incorporated, has ever had access to information contained in the files of the FBI as has been implied in some of its publications.

Sincerely yours,

John Edgar Hoover
Director

1 - Houston (enclosure)
SEE NOTE TO HOUSTON, PAGE TWO

100-354033

Mrs. Robert E. Taylor

ATTENTION: SAC, HOUSTON

Enclosed is a copy of correspondent's communication. Bufiles contain no identifiable data concerning the correspondent.

She enclosed a pamphlet issued by the Cinema Educational Guild, Incorporated, (CEG), which contained a long list of individuals who, according to the pamphlet, have been associated with the Communist Party or communist front organizations.

The CEG, whose Director is Myron C. Fagan, is allegedly an anticommunist group which has been responsible for the distribution of anticommunist, anti-Negro and anti-Semitic pamphlets. Fagan in the past has attempted to use the Director's name in furtherance of his programs and it has been necessary on several occasions to contact him and request that he refrain from mentioning the FBI in any way.

"Human Events" is a newsletter published in Washington, D. C., which generally is critical of the Soviet Union and communism. "Human Events" has not been the subject of an investigation by the Bureau.

The "American Mercury" is owned by Russell Maguire who is allegedly anticommunist and has the reputation of being bitterly anti-Semitic. The publication was the subject of a Registration Act investigation in 1958 based upon indications of an exchange of funds between Maguire and the Ambassador of the Dominican Republic. This allegation was not established and the case was closed in October, 1958.

The John Birch Society and its founder, Robert Welch, have not been the subjects of an investigation by the Bureau. Welch and his organization have been very critical of President Eisenhower and his administration. Information concerning this individual and his organization is contained in SAC Letter 60-5.

62-1521

SAC, LOS ANGELES 9/7/60

SAC, RICHMOND (100-0)

CHRISTIAN ANTI-COMMUNISM CRUSADE
INFORMATION CONCERNING

The following is furnished for the information of offices receiving copies of this letter:

On September 2, 1960, Mr. JAY D. PATTON, 809 Forest Avenue, Richmond, Virginia, called personally at the FBI Office in Richmond and furnished the following information to SA WILSON B. WADDY:

Mr. PATTON said he serves as a football official in the Southern Conference as a hobby. He is self-employed as a printing supplies salesman.

During recent weeks he attended a Football Officials' Conference in one of the Southern States. At this Conference he met THOMAS PARKER, MD, 110 South Calhoun Street, Greenville, South Carolina, a friend of long standing. PARKER discussed captioned organization with PATTON at some length. He described it as an organization attempting to expose the evils and dangers of Communism by teaching Americans its aims and practices. He asked PATTON to support this organization's program.

After returning to Richmond in August, 1960, PATTON received from PARKER literature published by captioned organization. This literature indicated the headquarters of captioned organization is at Long Beach 1, California. An address of a branch office was indicated to be W. P. STRUBE, JR., Secretary, P. O. Box 6422, Houston 6, Texas.

Richmond indices contain no reference to captioned organization.

2 - Los Angeles (REGISTERED MAIL)
1 - Charlotte (Info) (REGISTERED MAIL)
1 - Houston (Info) (REGISTERED MAIL)
1 - Richmond
WBW:iwp
(5)

100954D - 34

SEARCHED INDEXED
SERIALIZED FILED
SEP 12 1960
FBI - HOUSTON

OPTIONAL FORM NO. 10
5010-104-02

UNITED STATES GOVERNMENT

Memorandum

TO : SAC, HOUSTON

DATE: 9/22/60

FROM: SAC, SAN ANTONIO (66-0)

SUBJECT: W. P. STRUBE
INFORMATION CONCERNING

Mr. VICTOR CREIGHTON, Commander, Intelligence, U. S. Naval Reserve, and V ce President, National Bank of Commerce, has advised that the 8th Naval District has instituted an "Operation Alert" in connection with a Christian anti-Communism crusade. He stated that a program is under way to acquaint the Naval personnel with the problems of Communism, and that a meeting is to be held in the very near future in connection with the matter.

He advised that W. P. STRUBE, President of the Mid-American Life Insurance Company of Houston, Texas, has been highly recommended to them as an excellent speaker on the subject of anti-Communism.

Please advise as soon as possible whether or not your indices contain any derogatory information on STRUBE or he is known to your office.

2 - Houston (AM)
1 - San Antonio
CBJ:jar
(3)

100-9540-35

SAC, SAN ANTONIO (66-0) 9/27/60

SAC, HOUSTON (100-9540)

W. P. STRUBE
INFORMATION CONCERNING

Re San Antonio letter dated 9/22/60.

For the information of the San Antonio office, W. P. STRUBE, JR. has been known to the Houston office for some time. He is presently secretary of the Christian Anti-Communism Crusade, mailing address P. O. Box 6422, Houston 6, Texas.

For your further information, Mr. STRUBE is president of the Mid-American Life Insurance Company, 3400 Montrose Boulevard, Houston, Texas. According to information available to this office, Mr. STRUBE has been mentioned in the press on numerous occasions as being one of the youngest presidents of a life insurance company in the United States. He apparently has been affiliated with the Anti-Communism Crusade for a considerable period of time, and from information available to this office, appears to be well versed in connection with this subject.

STRUBE is allegedly closely associated with Dr. FREDERICK C. SCHWARZ. SCHWARZ is reportedly a physician from Australia, and according to the Bureau during the past several years has toured the United States lecturing on communism. The Bureau further advised that Dr. SCHWARZ testified before the House Committee on Un-American Activities, and was given extremely wide publicity by commerical concerns.

For your further information, a great number of individuals have communicated with the Bureau relative to Mr. STRUBE. He has been contacted by this office and appears

2 - San Antonio (RM)
1 - Houston
HOH:mec
(3)

100-[illegible]-36

to be most friendly and cooperative, and has, according to his own statement, been a great admirer of the Director and the Director's constant vigilance toward the communist party and its members.

There is nothing in the Houston office of a derogatory nature relative to Mr. STRUBE.

CIVITAN

BUILDERS OF GOOD CITIZENSHIP

International

THE TEXAS DISTRICT

DISTRICT OFFICERS

GOVERNOR
Phillip Reid
P. O. Box 1285
Irving, Texas

PAST GOVERNOR
Warren A. Bade
P. O. Box 2571
Houston 1, Texas

GOVERNOR-ELECT
Herschel Futch
2115 Main St.
Dallas 1, Texas

SECRETARY-TREASURER
Ben Thurmond
1602 W. Grauwyler
Irving, Texas

LT. GOVERNORS

Area No. 1:
Steve Killebrew
2610 Proctor St.
Port Arthur, Texas

Area No. 2:
Jack Renwick
2411 West Commerce
San Antonio, Texas

Area No. 3:
Sterling Emens
First National Bank
Lubbock, Texas

Area No. 4:
Herman Windsor
4940 Glade
Fort Worth, Texas

Area No. 5:
Bill Cannon
3604 Hogan
Mesquite, Texas

Area No. 6:
James E. O'Donnell
3406 Republic National Bank
Dallas, Texas

Area No. 7:
Floyd Spear
1301 Lantrip
Kilgore, Texas

MEMBERSHIP CHAIRMAN
Warren A. Bade
P. O. Box 2571
Houston, Texas

EXTENSION CHAIRMAN
Sterling O. (Jack) Lyons
4123 Guadalupe
Austin, Texas

DISTRICT CHAIRMAN OF COUNCIL MEETINGS AND DISTRICT CONVENTION
T. Ray Dorsey
512 S. Waverly Drive
Dallas, Texas

JUDGE ADVOCATE
Conway L. Wallace, Attorney
201 Scanlan Building
Houston, Texas

SGT. AT ARMS
Howard E. Brady
3404 Floyd
Dallas, Texas

DISTRICT CHAPLAIN
Rev. Maxie B. Burch
Oak Haven Methodist Church
Irving, Texas

BULLETIN EDITOR
Narel Haynes
Irving News Record
Irving, Texas

October 3, 1960

Mr. H. O. Hawkins, Agent In Charge
Federal Bureau of Investigation
Federal Building
Houston, Texas

FILED 100-0-1562, 1583 100-9540

Dear Mr. Hawkins:

Last week I discussed with you Mr. William Strubel, Jr., Dr. Fred Schwarz, and the Christian Anti-Communism Crusade. During our phone conversation you mentioned that according to your local files you did not have anything of a derogatory nature on these two gentlemen or their organization. Would you be in a position to give me a letter to this effect? If you cannot give me a letter is there any possible way that we can obtain such a letter from the F. B. I.?

We appreciated your suggestion of contacting the Americanism Committee and the House Un-American Activities Committee as a means of obtaining further clearance on these people.

Civitan is very much interested in carrying on an educational program on the dangers of communism. We, however, want to make very sure that the organization and people with whom we are dealing are what they represent themselves to be.

Your further help will be appreciated.

Cordially yours,

Warren A. Bade
Past Governor
Texas District

WAB/ms

100-9540-37

SEARCHED ... INDEXED ...
SERIALIZED ... FILED ...
OCT 6 1960
FBI - HOUSTON

Following are extracts of the Resolutions Committee report made at the Texas District Council, Civitan International, at its meeting in Wichita Falls, Texas, September 24, 1960:

Whereas, the Texas District of Civitan International in the first council meeting of the Civitan year 1960-1961 met in Wichita Falls, Texas, it is the desire of this council to express itself in appreciation as well as to make known its stand on issues vital to Civitans and our world.

Whereas, all Civitans are deeply concerned with not only their local communities, but with the welfare of our nation and the freedom and liberty of all mankind,

BE IT RESOLVED, that as true Civitans we condemn those ideologies expressed through international Socialism and Communism as a threat to not only world peace but a threat to the freedom and integrity of all peoples. That our hearts do bleed for the injuries and injustices enforced upon our neighbors to the south as well as throughout the world. That we as a free people shall acknowledge our own slavery until all humanity is free thus accentuating our our firm belief in brotherhood. Further, that we shall assume more fully upon ourselves the task of awakening the people of our beloved country to the dangers to our own independence and freedom, and to the perils of an apathetic attitude toward such a vicious organized system as international Socialism and Communism.

FURTHER RESOLVED, that in order to continue in a state of democracy with the rights reserved for all persons to life, liberty and the pursuit of individual freedoms, this Council urgently stresses to our local communities the full acceptance of the privilege of a free people to vote. It is not the intention of this Council and International to intimidate or to support political preferences, but it is the intention of this Council and International to urge an intelligent approach on the part of the American people as they express themselves by electing the representatives of a free way of life to public office.

FURTHER RESOLVED, that we as the Texas District Council approve and adopt the International resolution to wage an untiring war upon pornography. That we as individual Civitans, as local clubs as well as District and International publicly condemn at every opportunity this criminal menace to the moral well being of our nation and especially to the moral strength of the youth of our nation.

800 Federal Office Building
Houston 2, Texas
October 5, 1960

Mr. Warren A. Bade
P. O. Box 2571
Houston, Texas

Dear Mr. Bade:

Your letter dated October 3, 1960, has been received and the interest which prompted you to communicate is appreciated.

In response to your inquiry, I must advise that the jurisdiction and responsibilities of the FBI do not extend to furnishing evaluations or comments concerning the character or integrity of any individual, publication or organization. The FBI is strictly an investigative agency of the Federal government and as such does not issue clearances or non-clearances.

I am sure that you understand the necessity for this policy and will not infer that we do or do not have in our files the information you desire.

In connection with your program toward combatting communism, the thought occurred to me in which you might possibly be interested. If so, please feel free to contact me at your convenience.

Thanking you for your assistance and cooperation, I remain,

Very sincerely yours,

H. O. HAWKINS
Special Agent in Charge

1 - Addressee
1 - Houston
HOH:mec (2)

100-9540-38

TRUE COPY

Nov. 2, 1960

Mr. J. Edgar Hoover
Director of the F.B.I.
Federal Bureau of Investigation
Washington, D. C.

Dear Sir:

I have been told by your local F.B.I. representative to write directly to your office for information concerning the Christian Anti-Communism Crusade here in Houston, Texas.

I am also seeking information concerning an author of a highly circulated fiction novel published under a pseudonym. I have been told Bob Winston is the real name of Victor J. Fox. Who is he?

I have had a high regard for you and the fine job you have done for this country for many years, but as of late I have been humbly shameful that as an individual and mother of three children I have not encouraged you and your kind. I do hope we number more than a score at this late date.

Most affectionately,

/s/ Mrs. Wm. Strickland
11914 Atwell Dr.
Houston 35, Texas

TRUE COPY

100-9540-39

SEARCHED
9/1/1960

November 16, 1960

Mrs. William H. Strickland
11914 Atwell Drive
Houston 35, Texas

Dear Mrs. Strickland:

Your letter dated November 2, 1960, has been received and the interest which prompted your communication is indeed appreciated.

In response to your inquiries, I must advise that the jurisdiction and responsibilities of the FBI do not extend to furnishing evaluations or comments concerning the character or integrity of any individual, publication or organization. The FBI is strictly an investigative agency of the Federal Government and, as such, does not issue clearances or nonclearances. Furthermore, information in our files is maintained as confidential and available only for official use in accordance with a regulation of the Department of Justice.

I have noted your kind comments and I trust that the work of this Bureau will continue to merit your support.

In view of your interest, I am enclosing some material available for general distribution by the FBI which you may like to read.

Sincerely yours,

J. Edgar Hoover

John Edgar Hoover
Director

Enclosures - 6

100-25740-40

SEARCHED ... INDEXED ...
SERIALIZED ... FILED ...
NOV 7 1960
FBI - HOUSTON

(2) - Houston (Enclosure) (SEE NOTE PAGE TWO)

Mrs. William H. Strickland

ATTENTION: SAC, HOUSTON:

Enclosed is a copy of correspondent's communication. Bufiles contain no identifiable data concerning correspondent. 100-9520

It is noted that correspondent states that she was referred to the Bureau by the local FBI office for information concerning the Christian Anti-Communism Crusade. You should advise all Agents in your Division that in the future when inquiries of this nature are received concerning organizations, individuals or publications the individuals making inquiries should not be referred to the Bureau.

You should explain that the FBI is strictly an investigative agency of the Federal Government and does not furnish evaluations or comments and, in addition, you should explain the confidential nature of Bureau files.

For your information, the Christian Anti-Communism Crusade, headed by Dr. Fred C. Schwarz, has never been the subject of a Bureau investigation. Dr. Schwarz is reportedly a physician from Australia described as a consistent opponent of communism since 1949. In recent years he has toured this country lecturing on communism.

Bufiles reveal that Robert A. Winston under the pen name of Victor J. Fox, wrote "The Pentagon Case" which, while fiction, gives the impression it is based on fact. The book refers to a subtle plot by the communists to wreck the American way of life and demoralize military personnel. In 1955 Winston was a special assistant to the Assistant Secretary of the Navy for Personnel and Reserve Forces. He frequently has alleged that Secretary of Defense Thomas A. Gates tried to railroad him into a mental ward in 1955 to discredit charges that communists had infiltrated the Pentagon.

NOTE CONTINUED PAGE THREE

Mrs. William H. Strickland

NOTE TO SAC, HOUSTON FROM PAGE TWO:

The following items of literature were sent to the correspondent:

1. "Communist Target - Youth."
2. "One Nation's Response to Communism."
3. "America - Freedom's Champion."
4. Reprint from "FBI Law Enforcement Bulletin," March, 1960, with "An Analysis of the 17th National Convention of the CP, USA."
5. "What You Can Do To Fight Communism and Preserve America."
6. "Communist Illusion and Democratic Reality.

FIRST /in Radio and Television KPRC

JACK HARRIS
Vice President and
General Manager

P. O. Box 1234
Houston 1, Texas

Dec. 14, 1960

Mr. J. Edgar Hoover
Director
Federal Bureau of Investigation
Washington, D. C.

100-1540*

Re: Christian Anti-Communism Crusade
Cardinal Joseph Mindszenty Foundation

Dear Mr. Hoover:

Our inquiry concerns what information you may be able to give us concerning the above organizations.

Our reason is outlined briefly as follows:

Wed., Nov. 30th - Mr. W. P. Strube, Jr., Vice-President of Christian Anti-Communism Crusade and Mr. Frank Fuller, Active member of Cardinal Joseph Mindszenty Foundation, appeared on our TV Conversation Show, "Midnight With Marietta." Our objective is to introduce controversial subjects and thought-provoking discussion.

This particular telecast was so successful that we were obliged to make the offer to hold a four-night seminar, with the reservation that listeners response warranted. Each session will be devoted to what efforts Americans can and must exert to combat Communism in the free world. It is our intention that each telecast be one to one and one-half-hour in length.

DEC 21 1960

Response is overwhelming and still coming in by phone and by mail. Needless to say, we would like to conduct the seminar, however we would appreciate your reports on these organizations and your suggestions regarding them. Any ideas expressed by you or your organization and all information given us will be held in strictest confidence.

100-9540-44

(more)

Since we hope to present this series in January, 1961, it is desirable that these requests be expedited at your earliest convenience.

Thank you for your consideration and if we may be of any service to you, please do not hesitate to call upon us.

Cordially,

Bob Marich

Bob Marich
KPRC-TV
Producer-Director

BM:mm

December 21, 1960

Mr. Bob Marich
Producer-Director
KPRC-TV
Post Office Box 1234
Houston 1, Texas

Dear Mr. Marich:

I have received your letter of December 14 and appreciate the interest which prompted your communication.

Although I would like to be of service to you, the jurisdiction and responsibilities of the FBI do not extend to furnishing evaluations or comments concerning the character or integrity of any individual, publication or organization. However, I can advise you that the groups and individuals mentioned in your letter have not been investigated by this Bureau, but this should not be construed as clearance or nonclearance by the FBI.

I hope you will understand the reasons I am unable to be of aid to you in this instance.

Sincerely yours,

J. Edgar Hoover

1 - Houston - Enclosure

100-9540-42

January 11, 1961

3747 Rice Blvd.
Houston 5, Texas

Dr. John McFarland
Superintendent of Schools
1300 Capitol
Houston, Texas

COPY

Dear Dr. McFarland:

Last night I attended a PTA meeting at West University School. I have two sons attending that school and I am a member of that PTA.

I had been informed by the enclosed* bulletin that it would be worth my while to attend last night's meeting in order to be better informed concerning communism and the communists' plans for ruling our world. I am certain that whoever planned the program and invited the speaker did so in all good faith and with the best of intentions.

The speaker began at 7:45 and was still going strong at 8:50, at which time I left being unwilling to listen any longer. For over an hour I had been shouted at, talked down to and threatened by a rabble rouser who claimed to be Anti-Communism but in all truth is Anti-American, anti-government, anti-education and anti-church.

I am sure that he said nothing which could be proved untrue but his very pat speech was a continual barrage of half truths, material quoted out of context thereby subtly changing its original meaning, dire threats for our future as a free America; he belittled our way of life, our education, our government and announced that our churchs are filled with hypocrites and are urging us to surrender peacefully to communist world rule.

Apparently Mr. Strube is not "pro" anything since he did not offer a single constructive idea or opinion, nor any constructive information which parents and teachers need in order to fight the very real dangers of communism. He was most adept at quoting scripture when it served his purpose, which is not the purpose of scripture.

100-9540-43

SEARCHED INDEXED
SERIALIZED FILED
JAN 13 1961
FBI - HOUSTON

*- Bulletin referred to was a mimeographed PTA bulletin announcing that Mr. W. P. Strube, vice president of the Anti-Communism Council would speak on "The Communist Conspiracy for World Rule."

January 11, 1961

Dr. John McFarland

I am a firm believer in freedom of speech for myself and for others or I should not be writing this letter. I am proud that we have that freedom among the many others that are part of our national heritage and which permits men like Mr. Strube to set up their soap boxes whereever there is room for them. I do not believe there is room for those soapboxes in our schools.

I am grateful that we have the privilege of selecting what we shall listen to and where we shall listen to it and I feel very strongly that men of Mr. Strube's sort should not be permitted to speak as he does on the property of our Houston schools, which to many uninformed parents denotes approval and agreement of our school authorities.

Dr. McFarland, I urge you to lose no time in making every effort to personally hear this man speak, after which I sincerely hope you will find it advisable to suggest that our school leaders have no part in giving further time, space or ear to this very destructive type of program.

Very sincerely yours,

Mrs. Robert J. Wittrock
3747 Rice Blvd.
Houston 5, Texas

COPY

OPTIONAL FORM NO. 10
5010-104

UNITED STATES GOVERNMENT

Memorandum

TO : SAC, HOUSTON DATE: 2/20/61

FROM : SAC, SAN ANTONIO (100-9502)

TEB

SUBJECT: CHRISTIAN ANTI-COMMUNIST CRUSADE
SECURITY MATTER

On 2/6/61, [redacted] Detective, San Antonio Police Department, (protect identity), orally advised SA JACK B. PEDEN, of the San Antonio Office, that he had learned that the Christian Anti-Communist Crusade will meet on the following dates in the Shamrock Hilton Hotel, Houston, Texas: February 25, 1961; March 4, 1961; March 11, 1961; March 18, 1961. b6 b7C b7D

[redacted] said that he learned that the following men are officers or leaders in the Christian Anti-Communist Crusade: Dr. FRED C. SCHWARTZ, Box 890, Long Beach, California; W. P. STRUBE, JR., President, Mid-America Life Insurance Company (Vice President of CACC).

The foregoing is being furnished for your information.

2-Houston (RM)
1-San Antonio
JMK:lfe
(3)

Advise S.A.

100-9546-44

SEARCHED INDEXED
SERIALIZED FILED
FEB 21 1961
FBI - HOUSTON

OBSERVATIONS AND CONCLUSIONS

Rev. McNAIR advised that he objected and will continue to object to any speech made by LTNUEL.

One extra copy of this communication is being forwarded to the Bureau for the attention of the Crime Records Division.

DIRECTOR, FBI (63-4296-19) 3/16/61

SAC, HOUSTON (94-197)

CRIMDEL - CRS

RE: WILLIAM B. STRUBE, JR.,
SECRETARY,
CHRISTIAN ANTI-COMMUNISM CRUSADE
P. O. BOX 6522, HOUSTON, TEXAS

"The Houston Chronicle" date line 3/15/61 carried article wherein Rev. HUDSON A. McNAIR, Oaks Presbyterian Church, Houston, interrupted a speech being made by STRUBE at a PTA meeting. STRUBE was telling the audience of about two hundred that the crusades are issues only and not personalities. Rev. McNAIR said this was not true - that STRUBE had dealt with him as a personality.

Rev. McNAIR was referring to a letter he had sent to the PTA objecting to its invitation for STRUBE to speak. Rev. McNAIR advised STRUBE copied the letter and sent copies to Rev. McNAIR's church members.

Rev. McNAIR's objects to STRUBE as a speaker on the ground that according to McNAIR, STRUBE preaches hate and provokes strife in the division of membership of organizations. He also accused STRUBE of treating his audience like stupid children.

STRUBE related he hated communism like polio and cancer and related he felt slandered by the untruth charge made by Rev. McNAIR.

EVALUATION

This information has not been corroborated by any other source.

4 - Bureau
(3) - Houston
(1 - 100-9540)
FCF:bas
(7)

100-9540 - 45

Searched
Serialized
Indexed
Filed

U.S. Called Sole Bar To Communist Domination

W. P. Strube Jr, Houston insurancemen and lecturer on Communism, told an audience of 500 at the Jesse Jones High School Thursday night that the United States is the only remaining barrier to Communist world domination.

He was the principal speaker at a seminar sponsored by the Jesse Jones High School Teens Against Communism.

"Take the U. S. out of the picture," Strube said, "and the Communists will march through the rest of the world like Boy Scouts on parade."

COMMUNISM, Strube said, has grown from 17 advocates in 1903 to domination of a billion people.

Strube said the Communist powers have more people and more natural resources than the United States, with at least equal military strength, and are steadily cutting down the U. S. industrial and technological lead.

The United States leads in cars and television, Strube said and added: "You don't win wars with cars and one-eyed gods."

The Jesse Jones High School students will hold seminars next Thursday and on April 27 at the school.

Strube said the student seminars have been sanctioned by the school administration.

NEXT THURSDAY, Strube will talk on the Chinese Communist brainwashing of captive American prisoners in the Korean War.

Another speaker at the next seminar will be Mrs Charline Potter, supervisor of history, civics and economics in the Houston school system.

Mrs Potter is one of the teachers who advocated using the George Roberts Citizenship Training Course as a partial substitute for a series of lectures on Communism and Socialism which some teachers are required to attend.

Some educational, political and organized labor spokesmen have criticized the Roberts course variously as unnecessary for teachers, partisan to conservative politics, and anti-labor.

THE HOUSTON POST
4-14-61
Houston, Texas
RE: WILLIAM P. STRUBE, JR.
SECRETARY, CHRISTIAN
ANTI-COMMUNIST CRUSADE
SECURITY MATTER
(HOfile: 100-9540)-46
HOUSTON DIVISION

100-9540-46

SEARCHED INDEXED
SERIALIZED FILED
APR 14 1961
FBI - HOUSTON

Commie Tactics Described By Social Studies Teacher

A supervisor in the Houston Independent School District told some 400 high school students and adults Thursday night that Communism seeks to destroy America by spreading misunderstanding among its citizens.

"This country does not need to worry much about an attack from Russia or any other Communist source as long as they can hurt us in various other ways," said Mrs Charline Potter, supervisor of history, civics and economics in the secondary department of the Houston Independent School District.

SHE AND W. P. Strube Jr, Houston insurance man, spoke at the third in a series of seminars on Communism in the auditorium of Jesse Jones High School. Strube is vice president of the Christian Anti-Communist Crusade and is the seminar director.

The seminars are being sponsored by the Jesse Jones High School Teens Against Communism.

Mrs Roberts recently recommended the controversial George Roberts citizenship course to Houston school teachers. She and another school supervisor, O. D. Brown, are also conducting a series of five Communist-Socialist lectures for social studies teachers.

"WE ARE VERY fortunate in having a lady like this in charge of our social studies program in the Houston schools," Strube said of Mrs Potter.

Strube, who has spoken at every seminar, talked about what he called the Communist secret weapon — brainwashing.

He said that 25 per cent of the American prisoners taken in the Korean War willingly and knowingly collaborated with the enemy. The Communists were able to keep as many as 500 prisoners in a compound with only five or six guards, he said.

The audience also saw the film, "Operation Abolition," which concerns demonstrations in May of 1960 against the House Un-American Activities Committee.

The last in the series of seminars will be held next Thursday, when Strube will again speak.

THE HOUSTON CHRONICLE
4-20-61
Houston, Texas
RE: CHRISTIAN ANTI-COMMUNIST CRUSADE
INFORMATION CONCERNING
(HOfile: 100-9540)
HOUSTON DIVISION

100-9540-47

SEARCHED INDEXED
SERIALIZED FILED
APR 21 1961
FBI - HOUSTON

Communism Is Marietta Show Topic This Week

Two officials of the Christian Anti-Communism Crusade will make speeches and answer questions on the Midnight With Marietta Show on KPRC-TV Monday through Friday.

The speakers will be Dr Fred Schwarz of Sydney, Australia, and Long Beach, Calif, who is president of the Christian Anti-Communism Crusade, and W. P. Strube Jr of Houston, who is vice president.

AFTER STRUBE and Dr Schwarz deliver their prepared statements, they will be questioned by university professors, attorneys, newspapermen and ministers appearing on the program. The last 20 minutes of each show will be devoted to answering questions phoned in by viewers.

Midnight With Marietta is presented over KPRC-TV on week day nights, beginning at midnight and lasting until 1:30 AM, and features Marietta Marich. Her husband, Bob Marich, the producer of the show, will open each of next week's programs with an explanation of what the anti-Communism discussion is all about.

He will be followed by Marietta, who will introduce the guests and explain the special rules for this program, which include a time limit on questions and answers. Bob Stinsdale, a free lance writer whose current subject is the Civil War is appearing in The Houston Post, will act as moderator.

STRUBE WILL open the anti-Communism seminar Monday with a 30-minute speech entitled "Communism's Blueprint for World Conquest." He will speak the same length of time Friday on the subject of "A Program of Action for Victory Over Communism."

Dr Schwarz will open the each programs, Tuesday, Wednesday and Thursday, speaking on the topics: "Communist Appeal to the Intellectual," "Difficult, Devious, and Dangerous Dialectic," and "You Can Trust the Communist."

Those who will ask questions during the 40-minute discussion periods include Dr Louis Kestenberg, a professor of history at the University of Houston; Dr Clifton McCleskey, an assistant professor of political science at the University of Houston; Fred Lewis, a Houston attorney; Hart Stilwell, a free lance writer and Houston Post columnist; Jack Gurwell, editor of the Bellaire Texan; the Rev John Craig, pastor of the Central Presbyterian Church, and the Rev John Stevens, rector of Saint Timothy's Episcopal Church.

OTHERS WHO will appear to ask questions are Ben Levy, an attorney who is head of the Houston Chapter of the American Civil Liberties Union; Urban F. O'Brien, a professional engineer, and Dr Richard Evans, professor of psychology at the University of Houston.

Each night, two of these persons will appear to ask questions.

THE HOUSTON POST
5-28-61
Houston, Texas
RE: CHRISTIAN ANTI-COMMUNISM CRUSADE
INFORMATION CONCERNING
(HOfile: 100-9540)
HOUSTON DIVISION

100-9540-48

SEARCHED INDEXED
SERIALIZED FILED
JUN 2 1961
FBI - HOUSTON

EXPERT CONTENDS

Commies Appeal Most to Students

By HAROLD SCARLETT

The greatest appeal of Communism is "not to the poor, not to the ignorant—it is to the university student."

This was the contention of Dr Fred Schwarz, president of the Christian Anti-Communism Crusade, in a talk on the Midnight With Marietta show early Wednesday.

"THE MOST sinister single fact today," Schwarz said, "is that probably the majority of the students in the world are attracted to Communism."

The Australian physician said one [illegible] of Communism [illegible] Marx' "[illegible] argument" that [illegible] are the inevitable trappings of capitalism.

Schwarz rejected this theory, saying Marx built his argument on false foundations.

He said freedom pamphlets and student freedom speakers should be used at universities in Latin America and elsewhere to expose the "beautiful bait" of Communism.

SCHWARZ TALKED [illegible] second of five [illegible] work on [illegible] KPRC-TV [illegible] with a [illegible] Jr, vice president of the crusade.

They [illegible] a discussion and [illegible] two guests. The [illegible] Houston lawyer Fred Lewis, Houston attorney, and Hart Stilwell, a free-lance writer and Houston Post columnist.

Both [illegible] some points of Schwarz' talk.

Stilwell said he lived in Austria after World War II and closely observed the University of Vienna when a Young Communist Movement was active there.

"THE PHILOSOPHERS of Communism that have come out of the University of Texas is [illegible] small," Stilwell contended.

"They [illegible] need [illegible] they just needed [illegible] made by [illegible]."

Stilwell [illegible] Christian Anti-Communism in its entirety because "movements of this kind indicate a lack of faith in our democratic processes."

Stilwell agreed that Communist propaganda should be challenged around the world with freedom propaganda. But he insisted this should be done through government channels.

"What should we do to change the universities?" he asked Schwarz.

"I'VE NEVER heard such irrelevance," Schwarz retorted. "I haven't recommended that curriculum be changed . . . I don't attack the universities at all."

Schwarz said he feared the government is not equipped to combat Marxist propaganda effectively in many cases.

He said U. S. materials often [illegible] in warehouses and libraries, while the Communists deliver books to the people in the streets.

The Christian Anti-Communism Crusade has started a program of spreading its pamphlets in Latin America.

Lewis, the other guest, challenged Schwarz' talk because, he said, it depicted the Communists as loaded with favors as intellectuals.

HE CONTENDED that many intellectuals break with Communism simply because they can think their way out of it.

Schwarz agreed that more intellectuals have deserted Communism than have stuck with it. But he added that, in the U. S. at least, the intellectuals seem to stick with the Communist Party longer than the workers.

Lewis [illegible] that [illegible] Communists [illegible] but [illegible] and they are not in it [illegible].

"All intellectuals aren't Communists," Lewis said. "All Communist [illegible] intellectuals."

THE HOUSTON POST
6-1-61
Houston, Texas
RE: CHRISTIAN ANTI-COMMUNISM CRUSADE
INFORMATION CONCERNING
(HOfile: 100-9540)
HOUSTON DIVISION

100-9540—49

SEARCHED INDEXED
SERIALIZED FILED
JUN 2 1961
FBI - HOUSTON

TELEVISION DEBATE

Self Defeat Charged To Anti-Communists

By HAROLD SCARLETT

A Houston pastor charged Saturday that the Christian Anti-Communism Crusade makes people "sitting ducks" for the extremist John Birch Society.

"You go around and stir them up," the Rev John Stevens told two crusade leaders, "and then somebody else has to come along with a program."

THE MINISTER of Saint Timothy's Episcopal Church lit into the crusade in a television debate on the Midnight With Mardi etta show on KPRC-TV.

It was the last—and hottest—of five shows on Communism. The show, which normally ends at 1:30 AM, ran to 2:30.

The crusade leaders, Dr Fred Schwarz and W. P. Strube Jr, vigorously challenged Stevens' charge that they have no program.

Strube said the crusade does have a program which includes a printing plant in India, a magazine in South Africa, an overseas orphanage, and other operations.

TEMPERS GOT taut and voices rose as the Stevens and Dr Richard Evans, professor of psychology at the University of Houston, raised questions about the crusade.

Several times, the moderator, Robert Stonedale, had to caution the debaters to slow down.

Once, Schwarz broke into some sharp questioning of Strube by Stevens and charged the pastor with treating Strube unfairly.

THE HOUSTON POST
6-4-61
Houston, Texas
RE: CHRISTIAN ANTI-COMMUNISM CRUSADE
INFORMATION CONCERNING
(HOfile: 100-9540)
HOUSTON DIVISION

100-9540-50

SEARCHED INDEXED
SERIALIZED FILED
JUN 5 1961
FBI - HOUSTON

Stevens replied impatiently: "Mother, why don't you cut the apron strings and see if Junior can speak for himself?"

The minister at the time was in an acrid argument with Strube over charges by Strube in a crusade news letter that all major Protestant demoninations were following the Communist line at times.

STEVENS challenged Strube to back up this accusation against the minister's own church, the Protestant Episcopal Church, by citing chapter and verse.

"I want you to put up or shut up," Stevens demanded.

"I will not be drawn into personalities," Strube retorted, and he said so several times.

"You drew yourself into personalities," the minister said, "by naming all the Protestant denominations."

While Stevens, sailed into Strube, he complimented Schwarz on his "lucid and cogent talks" on Communism during the week-long TV series.

The minister contended, however, that the crusade program needs more teeth in it if it is to attract intellectuals away from Communism. Schwarz had said in an earlier program that Communism's greatest appeal was to intellectuals and students.

STEVENS REJECTED the crusade as "a truncated gospel" that preaches frantic fear of Communists' taking over the United States by 1973.

"It leaves people nowhere to go except to extremism," he said. "I must conclude that this program is neither Christian nor anti-Communist."

Schwarz countered by asking Stevens if the Episcopal Church has any anti-Communist program.

Stevens said that this was an embarrassing question because his church did not. He added, however, that church leaders were striving to take a greater part in the social and political life of their communities.

Evans, the psychology professor, made a blackboard analysis of the crusade's goals, methods, and motivations and then asked Schwarz:

"ARE YOU CREATING a party line? Not a Communist Party line but an anti-Communist Party line?"

Schwarz answered that he did not believe in a fully open mind on Communism. "I think we can close the mind to the extent that slavery is evil and Communism is evil," he said. "I believe a mind that is open at both ends is empty."

Evans then suggested that the crusade was spoon-feeding its members with simplified pamphlets. He asked Strube and Schwarz whether they would consider making university courses a part of their study program for members.

"We'll take it under advisement," Schwarz finally answered.

OPTIONAL FORM NO. 10
5010-104
UNITED STATES GOVERNMENT

Memorandum

TO : SAC, HOUSTON DATE: 6/7/61

FROM : ~~1H~~ SAC, KANSAS CITY (100-~~0-10168~~ NEW)

SUBJECT: CHRISTIAN ANTI-COMMUNISM CRUSADE
IS - C

On 6/2/61 Mr. GEORGE R. DRAGO, 2646 S. Glenstone Street, Springfield, Missouri, a real estate salesman for Ellingsworth Company, Springfield, Missouri, appeared at the Springfield Resident Agency and furnished the following:

On the evening of 6/1/61 a meeting was held at the home of [redacted] S. Pickwick Street, Springfield, Missouri, at which meeting anti-communist records were played and those present were requested to purchase literature from the Christian Anti-Communism Crusade, Post Office Box 6422 Houston, Texas, to pass out to their friends. b6 b7C

Mr. DRAGO said that he did not know who the persons behind this group were and what their true sentiments were, but that if he could be of assistance to the Bureau in any way he would offer his services.

Mr. DRAGO advised this meeting mentioned above was attended by the following persons:

[redacted]

[redacted] brother of [redacted] of the Missouri Rug Cleaners host.

It is requested that the Houston Office advise Kansas City if the Christian Anti-Communism Crusade is of interest to the Bureau so that a determination can be made whether or not to recontact DRAGO as a possible PSI or source of information concerning this group.

P
2-Houston (RM)
2-Kansas City (100-~~0-10168~~)
GCS:blo
(4)

100-9540-57

SEARCHED INDEXED
SERIALIZED FILED
JUN 10 1961
FBI - HOUSTON

SAC, KANSAS CITY 7/18/61

SAC, HOUSTON (100-9540)

CHRISTIAN ANTI-COMMUNIST CRUSADE
IS-C

RE: Kansas City letter to Houston, dated 6/7/61.

For your information the Christian Anti-Communist Crusade was organized in Houston, Texas by W. P. STRUBE, JR. He is presently secretary of the organization which has the mailing address of PO Box 6422, Houston 6, Texas.

STRUBE and his organization is well known to the Houston Office and information concerning STRUBE and the organization has previously been furnished to the Bureau. STRUBE is president of the Mid-American Life Insurance Co., 1111 Lovett, Houston, Texas. STRUBE is allegedly closely associated with Dr. FREDERICK C. SCHWARZ. SCHWARZ is reportedly a physican from Australia and according to the Bureau, during the past several years has toured the United States lecturing on communism. He has testified before the house committee on un-American Activities.

The Christian Anti-Communist Crusade furnishes literature and tape recordings for various anti-communist groups and STRUBE and the organization assist in organizing such groups throughout the country.

The Houston Office is in receipt of no information indicating that the Christian Anti-Communist Crusade should be of particular interest to the FBI.

C
2 - Kansas City(RM)
1 - Houston (RM)

GWK:wd
(3)

100-9540-52

OPTIONAL FORM NO. 10

UNITED STATES GOVERNMENT

Memorandum

TO : SAC, Houston

DATE: 8-22-61

FROM : SAC, Cleveland (100-25166)

SUBJECT: CHRISTIAN ANTI-COMMUNISM CRUSADE
Post Office Box 6422
Houston 6, Texas
MISCELLANEOUS - INFORMATION CONCERNING

Information has come to the attention of the Cleveland Division that captioned organization has been active in establishing local study groups as a method of effectively combating communism.

On 8-15-61, [redacted] SchillerAvenue, Sandusky, Ohio, stated that such activity is commencing in his community.

b6
b7C

Houston is requested to check its indices regarding this organization and advise as to its validity and purposes.

2-Houston
1-Cleveland
JJC'cmh
(3)

100-95540-53

SEARCHED INDEXED
SERIALIZED FILED
AUG 25 1961
FBI - HOUSTON

SAC, CLEVELAND (100-25166) 9/20/61

SAC, HOUSTON (100-9540)

CHANGED (INTEROFFICE):
CHRISTIAN ANTI-COMMUNIST CRUSADE
IS - C

RE: Cleveland letter to Houston dated 8/22/61 entitled "CHRISTIAN ANTI-COMMUNISM CRUSADE, Post Office Box 6422, Houston 6, Texas, MISCELLANEOUS - INFORMATION CONCERNING."

The title of this case is being marked changed to reflect the correct name of the organization as the Christian Anti-Communist Crusade.

For your information, the Christian Anti-Communist Crusade was organized in Houston, Texas, by W. P. STRUBE, JR. He is presently secretary of the organization and maintains an address of Post Office Box 6422, Houston 6, Texas.

This organization and STRUBE are well known to the Houston Office, and information concerning STRUBE and the organization has previously been furnished to the Bureau. STRUBE is President of the Mid-American Life Insurance Company, 1111 Lovett, Houston, Texas, and is allegedly closely associated with Dr. FREDERICK C. SCHWARZ. SCHWARZ is reportedly a physician from Australia, and, according to the Bureau, has in recent years toured the United States lecturing on communism.

The Christian Anti-Communist Crusade furnishes literature and tape recordings for various anti-communist groups. STRUBE and his organization also assist in organizing such groups throughout the country. The Houston Office is in receipt of no information indicating that this organization should be of particular interest to the Bureau.

Searched
Serialized
Indexed
Filed

C
2 - Cleveland (RM)
1 - Houston

GWK:ylc
(3)

100-9540-54



ALAMO
KIWANIS CLUB OF SAN ANTONIO

BOX 302-GUNTER HOTEL
SAN ANTONIO 6, TEXAS

"THE MOST OUTSTANDING ORGANIZATION OF THE YEAR"

September 10, 1962

Mr. Robert E. Rightmyer
Special Agent FBI
P. O. Box 61227
Houston, Texas

Dear Mr. Rightmyer:

The local FBI office suggests that we ask you about a pamphlet printed in Houston, inasmuch as we are contemplating distributing this pamphlet here in the colleges and high schools. It is printed by the Christian Anti-communism Crusade, P. O. Box 6422, Houston 6, Texas. This pamphlet is titled "What Can I Do ? to Combat Communism".

As a service club we are anxious to do what we can about Communism spreading throughout the United States and feel that our youngsters should be constantly alerted.

Your judgement about this pamphlet will be appreciated.

Yours truly,

Wm. Center

Wm. M. Center, President.

WMC/vp

100-9540-55

Dalrymple

Pls see me

ALAMO KIWANIS CLUB
BOX 302
GUNTER HOTEL
SAN ANTONIO 6, TEXAS

SAN ANTONIO 6 TEX
SEP 10
5 PM
62

HIRE THE HANDI



Mr. Robert E. Rightmyer
Special Agent FBI
P. O. Box 61227
Houston, Texas

6015 Federal Building
and U. S. Court House
515 Rusk Avenue
Houston, Texas

September 14, 1962

Mr. William M. Center, President
Alamo Kiwanis Club of San Antonio
Box 302 - Gunter Hotel
San Antonio 6, Texas

Dear Sir:

Your letter of September 10, 1962, has been received in which you request information concerning the Christian Anti-Communism Crusade, Houston, Texas, and in which you also express your interest in providing students in the San Antonio area with material concerning communism.

Although I should like to be of service to you in connection with your specific inquiry, I must advise that the jurisdiction and responsibilities of the FBI as an investigative agency do not extend to furnishing evaluation or comments concerning the character or integrity of any individual, publication, or organization. The FBI is strictly an investigative agency of the Federal Government and as such does not issue clearances or non-clearances. Furthermore, information in our files is maintained as confidential and available only for official use in accordance with a regulation of the Department of Justice. I am sure you will agree that for us to furnish information of the type you requested would in effect constitute an approval or disapproval of the organization you mentioned.

Searched ___
Indexed ___
Filed ___

Your awareness of the communist menace and the desire of your group to alert the youth of your community are certainly commendable, and the FBI is always pleased to learn that civic groups are taking an active part in such programs.

1 - Addressee 1 - San Antonio (100-9502)
2 - Houston (100-9540) ED:yk (4)

100-9540-56

In connection with this problem, you may be interested to know that the FBI has received numerous requests for a handbook on the nature of communism to assist schools and colleges which are planning the institution of courses on communism. In this connection, Director J. Edgar Hoover has written a new book which will be published on October 1, 1962, by Holt, Rinehart and Winston. This new book is entitled "A Study of Communism." A number of civic organizations have expressed an interest in this book as a possible text book in this field. You may desire to explore the possibility of utilizing this publication when it is available.

I hope that the above information will be of some assistance to you. Please feel free to contact our office in San Antonio if this Bureau can be of further help to you.

Very truly yours,

ROBERT E. RIGHTMYER
Special Agent in Charge

SAC, SAN ANTONIO (100-9502) 9/14/62

SAC, HOUSTON (100-9540)

CHRISTIAN ANTI-COMMUNISM CRUSADE
IS - C

Enclosed herewith is one copy of a letter to Mr. WILLIAM M. CENTER, President of the Alamo Kiwanis Club of San Antonio, which was sent in response to his letter directed to this office. Mr. CENTER indicated the San Antonio office of the FBI had referred him to the Houston Office in connection with this matter.

For the information of San Antonio, both the Houston Office and the Bureau headquarters receive frequent inquiry from citizens regarding captioned organization which is active in the anti-communism field. The Houston Office has not or course engaged in any joint activities with this organization, and in fact it has been necessary on one or more occasions to discreetly reprimand representatives of this organization for their apparent efforts to imply association with the Bureau in connection with their activities. This organization is considered very controversial in the Houston area and many citizens have written to express opinions that the organization actually does more harm than good.

In similar instances in the past, the Bureau has specifically stated that any field office receiving inquiries concerning this or any other private organization should answer such inquiries promptly along the lines set out in the enclosed letter. It is believed that this policy is desirable in order that any persons making such inquiries will understand that the Bureau's policy is applied uniformly and that decisions regarding the furnishing of information are not left to the discretion of individual field offices.

2 - San Antonio (Enc. 1)
1 - Houston

ED:yk
(3)

100-9540-57

It is suggested that you bring this matter to the attention of agents who might be handling such inquiries in the future in accordance with the Bureau's instructions in similar cases.

OPTIONAL FORM NO. 10
5010-104

UNITED STATES GOVERNMENT

Memorandum

TO : SAC, HOUSTON (100-9540) DATE: 1/15/64

FROM : SA EDWIN DALRYMPLE

SUBJECT: CHRISTIAN ANTI-COMMUNISM CRUSADE
INFORMATION CONCERNING

On 11/18/63, EARL YOUNGBLOOD, Sunday School Superintendent, Eastwood Baptist Church, Houston, Texas, visited the Houston Office concerning captioned organization. YOUNGBLOOD stated that someone in his church, without his approval, had arranged with WILLIAM P. STRUBE, JR., of this organization to furnish certain literature and other training materials which were being used in his Sunday School. YOUNGBLOOD stated that he had serious reservations as to the propriety of this material and he desired to know if information concerning this organization might be made available to him.

In accordance with Bureau policy, Mr. YOUNGBLOOD was advised that the FBI, as an investigative agency, could not furnish any information from its files to private individuals and that the responsibilities of the FBI did not extend to furnishing descriptions or evaluations concerning the character or integrity of any individual, publication or organization. Mr. YOUNGBLOOD seemed to understand the necessity of this policy and exhibited a very reasonable attitude. Mr. YOUNGBLOOD was advised that, in accordance with his request, his visit to this office would be made a matter of record inasmuch as he did not want to be identified as any sponsor for captioned organization.

The above is submitted for indexing purposes.

ED:yk
(1)

100-9540-58

SEARCHED INDEXED
SERIALIZED FILED
JAN 15 1
FBI - HOUSTON

Christian Anti-Communism Crusade

P. O. BOX 890
124 E. FIRST ST
LONG BEACH, CALIF. 90801
HEmlock 7-0941

August 1, 1975

157-2367-2303 p.2

100-9540*

Dear Sir:

Enclosed is a document containing testimony on Urban Guerrilla Warfare published by the Internal Security Subcommittee of the Senate Judiciary Committee.

This testimony discusses:

1. The doctrines that recruit urban guerrillas.
2. Urban guerrilla activities and objectives.
3. The roles played by students, prisoners and veterans.
4. The assistance given to urban guerrillas by the news media and certain judicial verdicts.
5. The relationship of communism and fascism to the urban guerrillas.
6. Effective counter measures.

I hope you will find this document useful in your work. If you wish additional copies, we will be glad to provide them without charge.

Sincerely,

Fred Schwarz

Fred Schwarz
President

FCS/sl
Encl.

100-9540-61

SEARCHED INDEXED
SERIALIZED FILED
AUG 7 1975
FBI - HOUSTON

FEDERAL BUREAU OF INVESTIGATION
FOIPA
DELETED PAGE INFORMATION SHEET

No Duplication Fees are charged for Deleted Page Information Sheet(s).

Total Deleted Page(s) ~ 2
Page 327 ~ Referral/Direct
Page 328 ~ Referral/Direct